



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

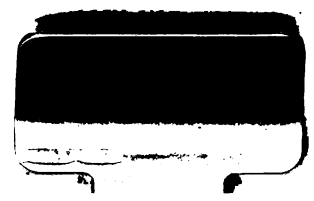
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>









**THE ANCESTORS AND DESCENDANTS  
OF EDMOND HAWES.**









**James**

# EDMOND HAWES

OF YARMOUTH, MASSACHUSETTS,  
AN EMIGRANT TO AMERICA IN 1635,  
HIS ANCESTORS,

INCLUDING THE ALLIED FAMILIES OF  
BROME, COLLES, GRESWOLD, PORTER,  
RODY, SHIRLEY AND WHITFIELD;  
AND SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS

BY

JAMES WILLIAM HAWES, A. M.



THE LYONS GENEALOGICAL COMPANY

THE LYONS GENEALOGICAL COMPANY  
NEW YORK MCMXIV

2024

NOV 7 1894

Inv. 969

CS

71

439

1914

## PREFACE

In 1882 the writer published a genealogy of his ancestor, Edmond<sup>1</sup> Hawes of Yarmouth, and his Chatham descendants to the sixth generation, in the light of the information he then possessed.<sup>a</sup> Subsequent investigations in England discovered the birthplace and the ancestors of Edmond, and in 1911 the writer published in *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*<sup>b</sup> a short account of the English family. The present work gives a fuller history, correcting errors and embodying the results of the latest investigations, and contains genealogies of the Brome, Colles, Porter and other families with which the ancestors of the writer in England were allied by marriage. The Hawes and other English ancestors were arms-bearing gentlemen. In this country the marriages were with the families of Plymouth Colony, and the writer is a descendant of John Howland, Elizabeth Tillie, John Tillie and his wife, Stephen and Gyles Hopkins, Elder William Brewster and his wife, Mary Brewster, Mayflower passengers; of Capt. John Gorham and John Taylor, who served in King Philip's War; and of John<sup>4</sup> and John<sup>5</sup> Hawes of Revolutionary record. Three others of the name of Hawes came to New England at about the same time as Edmond, viz.: Robert Hawes, who landed in 1635 and resided in Salem, Wenham and Roxbury; Richard Hawes, who came also in 1635 and lived in Dorchester; and Edward Hawes, who was in Dedham as early as 1648. There is no evidence that these three were of kin to each other, and it is certain that they were not nearly related to Edmond. Acknowledgment should be made that Messrs. William T. Wardwell (now deceased) and James Anderson

<sup>a</sup>Chatham (Mass.) Monitor, June 6, 1882.

<sup>b</sup>Vol. 63, pp. 160, 386; v. 66, p. 185.

Hawes of New York City contributed to the expense of the English investigations. Invaluable aid in these investigations was freely given by Mr. Philip E. Martineau, of Birmingham, England, a learned antiquary, and by the Rev. Robert Pemberton, of Sutton Coldfield, England, author of "Solihull and its Church." The writer has also had the ungrudging assistance of his nephew William C. Smith, Esq., of Chatham, Mass., author of a history of that town, and of Mr. Frank M. Hawes, of Somerville, Mass., a descendant of Richard, who has long been engaged upon the history of the four branches of the Hawes name.

JAMES W. HAWES

## CONTENTS

	PAGES
PREFACE . . . . .	v
CONTENTS . . . . .	vii
INFORMATION . . . . .	ix
HAWES (ENGLISH) . . . . .	3
-GRESWOLD . . . . .	66
-BROME . . . . .	69
-RODY . . . . .	92
-SHIRLEY . . . . .	93
-CATESBY . . . . .	98
-COLLES . . . . .	104
-PORTER . . . . .	108
-WHITFIELD . . . . .	116
HAWES (AMERICAN) . . . . .	121



## INFORMATION

- Am. Cycl. ....The American Cyclopaedia.
- An. Deeds .....Catalogue of Ancient Deeds in the  
Public Record Office, published  
under direction of the Master of  
the Rolls. (5 vols. issued.)
- Archer, Sir Symon....Lord of the Manor of Solihull and an  
antiquary (1581-1662).
- Austin, John O.....The genealogical Dictionary of Rhode  
Island, 1887.
- b. ....Born.
- Baker, George .....History and Antiquities of the County  
of Northampton, 1822.
- Barn. Co. ....Barnstable County.
- Barn. Prob. Recs.....Barnstable Probate Records.
- Berry, Wm. ....County Genealogies. Pedigrees of the  
Families in the county of Kent,  
1830; also, same date, in the county  
of Sussex.
- Bridges, John .....History and Antiquities of Northamp-  
tonshire, edited by Rev. Peter  
Whalley in 1791. The materials  
had been assembled by Bridges  
during a few years before his death  
in 1724.
- Cal. of Inqs.....Calendar of Inquisitions Post Mortem  
and other Analogous Documents  
preserved in the Public Record Of-  
fice, published by authority of the  
Home Secretary. 8 vols. issued,  
1904-1913.
- Chat. ....Chatham.
- Close Rolls .....Calendar of the Close Rolls preserved  
in the Public Record Office, pub-  
lished by authority of the Home  
Secretary. (Several Volumes.)



**x ANCESTORS AND DESCENDANTS OF EDMOND HAWES**

- Clutterbuck, Robert ... History and Antiquities of the County of Hertford, 3 vols., 1815, 1821, 1827.
- Col. Top. & Geneal.... Collectanea Topographica et Genealogica.
- d. .... Died.
- Deyo, Simeon L..... History of Barnstable County, Massachusetts, 1890.
- Dict. of Nat. Biog..... Dictionary of National Biography.
- Doc. Hist. of N. Y..... The Documentary History of the State of New York.
- Dugdale, Sir Wm..... The Antiquities of Warwickshire. 1st ed. 1656, in one volume. A 2nd ed. in 2 volumes by the Rev. Dr. Wm. Wood was published in 1730, revised from Dugdale's own corrected copy, the editor continuing the work to his own time. The citations are from the 2nd ed.
- Early Prov. Recs..... Early Providence Records.
- Encycl. Brit. .... The Encyclopaedia Britannica, 11th ed.
- Files ..... Files of the Superior Court of Judicature, a provincial tribunal, whose files and records are now in the custody of the clerk of the Supreme Judicial Court, Boston.
- Freeman, Frederick ... History of Cape Cod, 1860, 1869.
- gr. st. .... Gravestone.
- Grazebrook, H. Sydney The Heraldry of Worcestershire, 1873.
- Habington, Thomas ... A Survey of Worcestershire from about 1585 to after 1600. Published (vol. I) 1894, and (vol. II) 1899.
- Hamper, William ..... An Antiquary of Birmingham (1776-1831), whose interleaved copy of Dugdale's Warwickshire is in the British Museum. His MS notes are based on the collections of Sir

- Symon Archer, including Dugdale's MS notes, on papers in his own possession, etc. He was editor of Dugdale's autobiography, diary and correspondence.
- Hannett, John .....The Forest of Arden, 1st edition, 1868; 2nd ed., 1894. The citations are from the 2nd ed.
- Har. ....Harwich.
- Harl. Soc. Pubs.....Harleian Society Publications.
- ib., id. ....The same book or authority.
- int. ....Declaration of intention of marriage.
- Inqs. p. m.....Inquisitions post mortem.
- m. ....Married.
- Mass. Hist. Colls.....Massachusetts Historical Society Collections.
- Mf. ....The Mayflower Descendant.
- Misc. Gen. et Her.....Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica.
- Nash, Treadway R....Collections for the History of Worcestershire. He lived from 1725 to 1811.
- N. E. Reg.....The New England Historical and Genealogical Register.
- Norris, Rev. Henry....Baddesley Clinton, its Manor, Church and Hall, 1897. Mr. Norris was a Roman Catholic priest of Tamworth. (The writer intends to place a copy in the New York Public Library.)
- Orcutt, Rev. Samuel....A History of the Old Town of Stratford and the city of Bridgeport, Connecticut, 1886.
- Otis, Amos .....Genealogical Notes of Barnstable Families, edited by Charles F. Swift, 1888.
- Palfrey, John G.....History of New England, 5 vols., 1859, *et seq.*
- Par. Reg. Soc.....The Parish Register Society.
- P. C. C.....Prerogative Court of Canterbury.
- Peirce's Colonial Lists..Civil, Military and Professional Lists

- of Plymouth and Rhode Island Colonies by Ebenezer W. Peirce, 1881.
- Pelletreau, Wm. S. . . . . History of Putnam County, New York, 1886.
- Pemberton, Rev. Robert. Solihull and its Church, 1905. Mr. Pemberton was Assistant Curate in Solihull Church in 1903 and some time after. (The writer intends to place a copy in the New York Public Library.)
- Plym Co. . . . . Plymouth County.
- Plym. Col. Recs. . . . . Plymouth Colony Records, printed, including the 1st volume of Deeds and the Laws. Other Deeds and the wills are in MS.
- Pope, Charles Henry . . . The Pioneers of Massachusetts, 1900.
- Prov. Recs. . . . . Providence Records. The citations are chiefly from the printed volumes.
- Savage, James . . . . . A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England, 1860-1862.
- Ser. . . . . Series.
- Smith, Wm. C. . . . . A History of Chatham, Massachusetts, 1909, et seq.
- Swift, Charles F. . . . . History of Old Yarmouth, 1884.
- Thomas Doane Papers. . . Deeds and other papers collected by Thomas Doane of Chatham, Mass., who died in 1756. They are now in the possession of Benjamin H. Doane, Esq., of New York City.
- Timmins, Samuel . . . . . History of Warwickshire, 1889.
- Vict. Hist. of Warsh. . . The Victoria History of the county Warwick.
- Visit. . . . . Visitation.
- Waters, Henry F. . . . . Genealogical Gleanings in England, 1901.
- Winsor, Justin . . . . . History of the Town of Duxbury, Mass., 1849.
- Yar. . . . . Yarmouth.

## DATES

In early times in England and America the beginning of the year was March 25. In 1752, Sept. 3 was made Sept. 14 (to equalize the calendar and the sun time) and the beginning of the year was made January 1. Prior to that March was the first month, April the second and so on, and dates between January 1 and March 25 were a year behind what would be the case under the new style. To indicate this fact, dates in the interval mentioned are given as of both years; for example, February 7, 1721-2.

## AMERICAN LOCALITIES

American localities, when not otherwise stated or indicated by the context, are in Massachusetts.

## WILLS

At the times herein considered English wills were proved in the Diocesan (or Bishop's) Courts. Wills of the inhabitants of Solihull are on file in the District Registry at Lichfield and of the inhabitants of many other localities in Warwickshire, in the District Registry at Worcester. But when a decedent had property in more than one county, his will was proved and registered (or recorded) in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury and the record is now at Somerset House, London.



**PART I**  
**IN ENGLAND**



## HAWES

### THE SEAT

EDMOND<sup>1</sup> HAWES was born in the parish of Solihull (sometimes called also Silhill), Warwickshire, England, where his ancestors had been prominent for at least three centuries. Warwickshire lies near the centre of England, and is bounded N. W. by Staffordshire and N. E. by Leicestershire (nearly touching Derbyshire between those two), E. and S. E. by Northampton and Oxfordshires, S. W. by Gloucestershire and W. by Worcestershire. Before the Anglo-Saxon invasion of England, the region was thinly occupied by a Celtic (Welsh) people, who had been considerably affected by Roman civilization.<sup>a</sup> Between the years 550 and 600 the Saxons moved in from the south, followed by the Angles from the north, the two nations meeting at the wooded plateau called the Forest of Arden, of which the greater part, including the district now Solihull, was occupied by the Angles. The Welsh had maintained themselves in this forest after they had been driven from the lower open ground, but soon after 600 they were compelled to abandon their position and flee west to their compatriots.<sup>b</sup> Between about 635 and 920 the region shared the fortunes of the Anglo-Saxon Kingdom of Mercia.<sup>c</sup> About 878, 948 and 1016 the Danes made inroads, but they do not appear to have formed any settlement here.<sup>d</sup> Upon the Norman conquest, in 1066, Warwickshire, with the rest of England, became subject to William.

Solihull is in the N. W. part of the county, bordering on the N. E. projection of Worcestershire, 7 m. S. E. of Birmingham. It is 13 m. N. W. of the town of Warwick, 18 m. N. of Stratford on Avon and 20 m. S. of Lichfield in Staffordshire. Until 1836 the parish formed part of the diocese of Lichfield.<sup>e</sup> It was

<sup>a</sup>1 Vict. Hist. of Warsh., 225 et seq.; 2 id. 421 et seq.

<sup>b</sup>Pemberton, XI-XIII, corrected by P. E. Martineau.

<sup>c</sup>18 Encycl. Brit. 151, 152; 28 id. 342, 343.

<sup>d</sup>2 Vict. Hist. of Warsh. 422.

<sup>e</sup>Pemberton, XIII.



composed of the manor (or lordship) of Ulverley, or Solihull, embracing the westerly and larger portion of the parish, and the manor (or lordship) of Longdon, embracing the easterly portion. The former included the sub-manors of Olton and Forshaw. The latter included the sub-manor of Widney. Ulverley is mentioned in Domesday Book, the register of land ordered by William the Conqueror in 1086, and had then about 150 inhabitants. Before the conquest it had belonged to Edwin, Earl of Mercia. In 1086 it belonged to Cristina, granddaughter of King Edmund Ironside and grandniece of Edward the Confessor, who, with the exception of Harold, was the last Saxon King. About this time she retired to Romsey Abbey, where she ended her days. The manor then came into the possession of Ralph de Limesi, said to be a nephew of William the Conqueror. In 1213, through the marriage of an heiress of this family, it came into the possession of Hugh de Odingsells, a Flemish soldier, one of the military adventurers of the period. His son and grandson, William, both active in the wars of their time, succeeded him. The latter married Ela, granddaughter of a natural son of Henry II, and died in 1295, when the manor passed out of the Odingsells name.<sup>f</sup> The first settlement was at Olton, about a mile N. of Solihull village, or town, and the inhabitants early in the 13th century migrated to the present site.<sup>g</sup> The earliest mention of the village by its name was between 1199 and 1216.<sup>h</sup> In 1242 the King granted to the lord of the manor and his heirs a weekly market on Wednesday and an annual fair in April.<sup>i</sup> The manor of Longdon is also mentioned in Domesday Book, and had then about 50 inhabitants. Before the conquest it was held by one Arnulf. In 1086 it belonged to Turchil of Warwick, under whom it was held by one Almar.<sup>j</sup> The parish of Solihull forms part of the Hundred of Hemlingford. Prior to 1886 the parish was divided into four districts for the purposes of taxation, to-wit: "The Borough" (which included Olton), Shirley, and Forshaw, which formed the manor of Solihull, and Longdon,

<sup>f</sup>Id., 1-27.

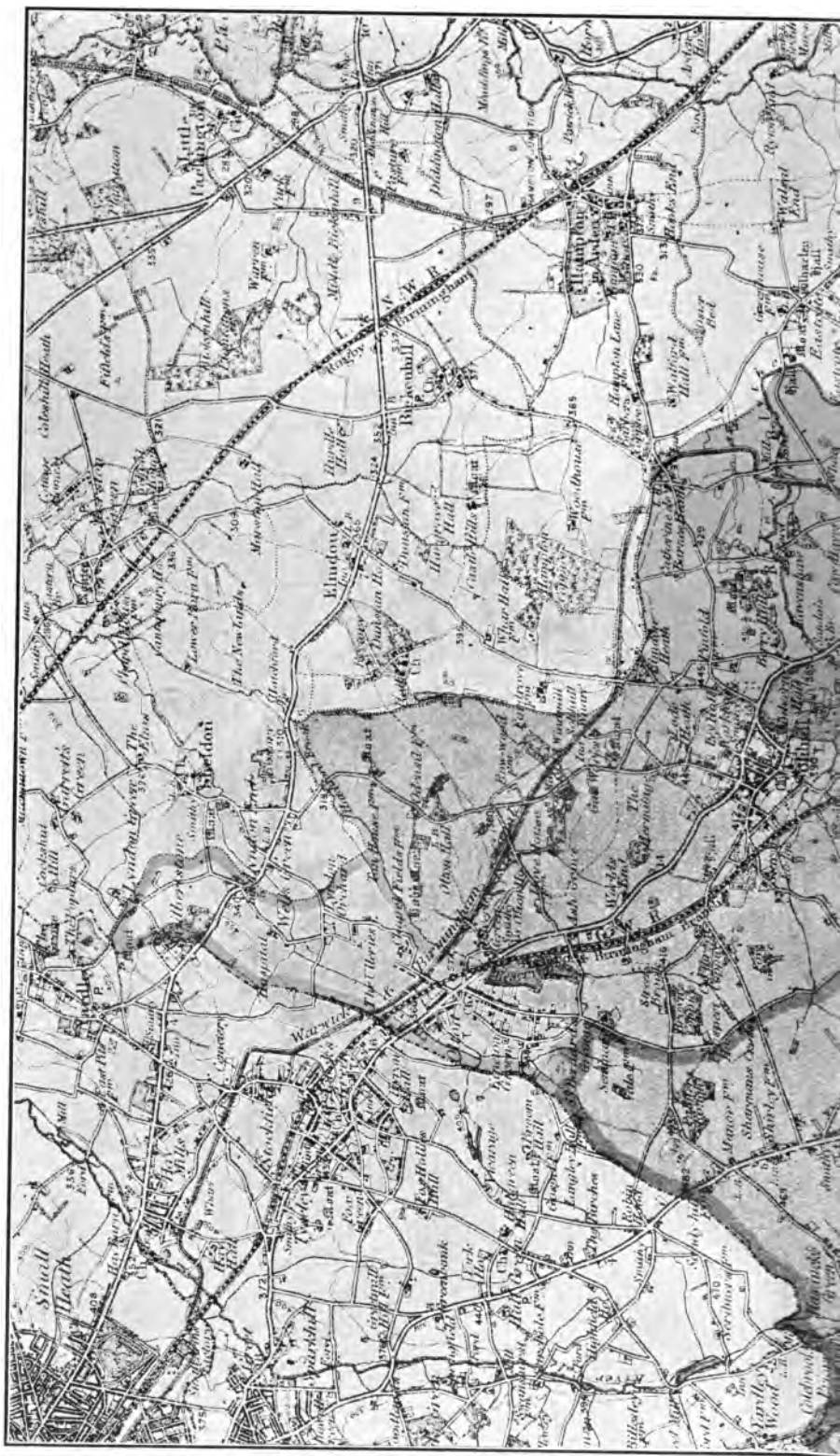
<sup>g</sup>Id., XVIII.

<sup>h</sup>Id. 2; 2 Dugdale, 939.

<sup>i</sup>Pemberton, 4.

<sup>j</sup>Id. 18-23.







SOLIHULL AND THE VICINITY



embracing the manor of that name. Smaller divisions, called "Ends," existed from ancient times for the maintenance of highways, to-wit: Borough End, Olton End, Longdon End, Forshaw End, Whitlox End, Shirley End (also called Shirley Street), and Widney End. The last two and Olton became subdivided into North and South, and Lyndon End was added. These were all abolished in 1886. Borough End, or the Borough, embraced the western part of the old village, or chief settlement, of Solihull, but did not include the church, which was in Widney End near the boundary between the manors of Solihull and Longdon.\* The village contains many old houses. Pemberton (p. 1) says: "Both village and Church tell of a remote past." "Perhaps no one but a stranger seeing Solihull for the first time realizes how much of its old-world aspect it still retains." Hannett (p. 185) says: "The town of Solihull, with its several hamlets, rich in historical associations and architectural interest. . . . The approach to this place, from Knowle, is of a highly sylvan character. Overhanging trees, with a beautiful and fertile country stretching beyond, will here richly recompense. . . . These, indeed, are the prevailing characteristics of Solihull, from whatever point of view the tourist may reach it." The parish, for civil purposes, embraces substantially the same territory as in ancient days, but for church purposes it was divided in 1843, Forshaw being added to an adjoining parish and the new parish of Shirley being erected.<sup>1</sup> The civil parish in 1086 had about 200 inhabitants; in 1563, about 800; in 1676, about 1360; in 1730, about 1595;<sup>2</sup> in 1801, 2473; in 1851, 3277; in 1901, 5332. As it stood in 1801, it comprised about 11,296 acres.<sup>3</sup> The English census gives the area as 12,468 acres and the population of that area as 7,517 in 1901 and 10,282 in 1911. The relative importance of Solihull has been dwarfed in modern times by the growth of Birmingham, of which it is now in considerable

\*Id., 29-31, 31 n. 1.

<sup>1</sup>Id. 28.

<sup>2</sup>2 Dugdale, 952, where the number of families about 1730 is given as 319, including 98 in the Borough, 46 in Shirley End, and 54 in Widney End.

<sup>3</sup>Pemberton, 28 n. 3, as modified by 2 Vict. Hist. of Warsh., 187. He gives the householders belonging to Non-Conformist bodies in 1676 as 26, to the Church of Rome 73, and to the Church of England, 733, but he writes that the last figure is probably a misprint for 173, making the whole number of householders 272 and the population about 1360.

part a suburb. It no longer has a market or a fair. Pemberton (p. 29) says: "It is not difficult to picture to ourselves the village life of early days. Cut off for the most part from the outside world, the villagers doubtless lived a happy, contented life, and horney-handed smiths sent forth from village anvils the weapons of war,<sup>o</sup> while doubtless some of Solihull's manhood would attend William and Sir William de Odingsells on their expeditions to Wales and Ireland. So long as there was a resident Squire, local government was probably for the most part in his hands, and the manorial courts would administer justice and regulate local finances. But after the year 1319, we seldom had a Lord of the Manor living on the spot, and consequently the power of the courts was increased. In practice this meant that village affairs were managed by a committee of local gentlemen and farmers, who appear now in one capacity, now in another. Especially is this the case after 1560, when, on the dissolution of the Chantry of S. Alphege, and the other chapels, the funds which had been devoted to their maintenance were vested in a body of ten Feoffees, who, with the Parish Bailiff at their head, became from that time forward a kind of local Parliament. In fact Solihull was a diminutive Republic, though always very loyal to the Crown." Solihull was thus a good nursery for one who was to take a prominent part in the founding of New England. This form of local government has disappeared in England under the legislation of the last quarter of a century.<sup>p</sup>

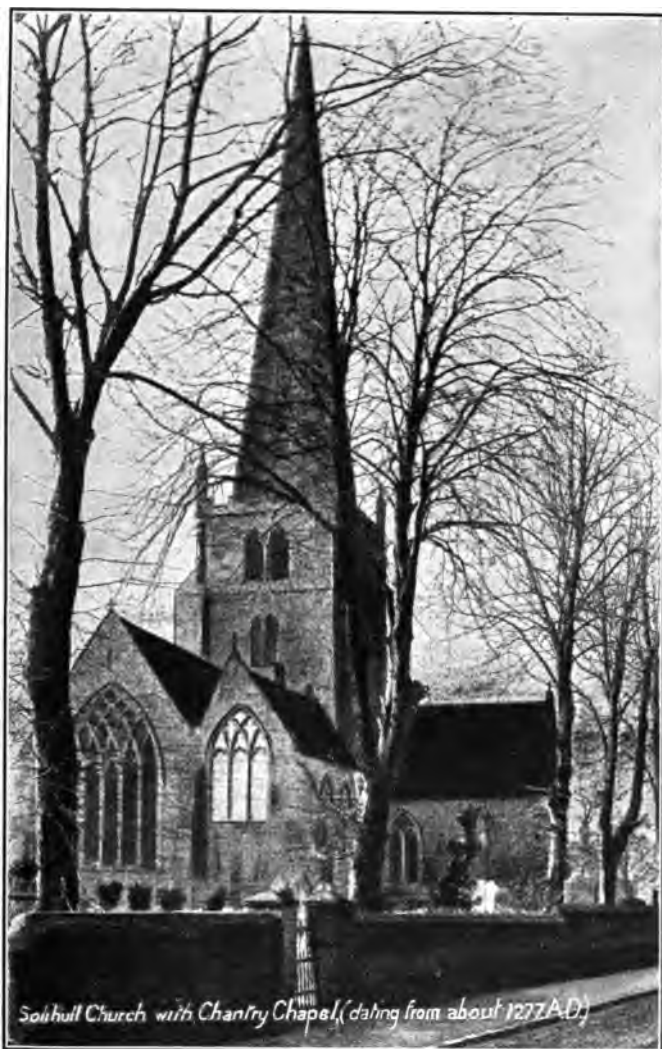
#### CHURCH AND SCHOOL

The parish church is one of the finest buildings in that part of Warwickshire, "and for the grandeur of its proportions, the unique character of some of its details, its historical interest, and its picturesque situation deserves a place in the front rank of Parish Churches."<sup>q</sup> It was dedicated to St. Alphege, Anglo-Saxon Archbishop of Canterbury, who was put to death by the

<sup>o</sup>Working in iron was a prominent industry in early times. High Street was originally called Smith Street. There were also formerly many wheelwrights producing agricultural carts and wagons. (Pemberton, I. P. E. Martineau.)

<sup>p</sup>Pemberton, 31.

<sup>q</sup>Id., 55.



*Southill Church with Chantry Chapel (dating from about 1277 A.D.)*





heathen Danes in 1012.<sup>7</sup> We find a priest referred to in Domesday Book in 1086, and therefore may safely infer that at that time there was a church at Ulverley, though no remains of it exist.<sup>8</sup> The earliest portions of the present church date from about the year 1220. The present chancel was built about 1277. "There is a small Priest's door on the south side of the Chancel which is of the same date as the rest of the work and still retains its old 'Sanctuary ring,' which afforded temporary immunity to fugitives from justice or vengeance."<sup>9</sup> The south transept was completed before 1331 and the north transept about 1350. About 1470 the tower was raised to its present height and a stone spire erected (in place of the old wooden one) 22 feet higher than the present one. The reconstruction and enlargement of the nave were completed in 1535, and at that period the South Aisle was built. The North Aisle was rebuilt between 1360 and 1370. "At its eastern end the North Aisle butts up against the Transept Wall, which is not pierced as usual, and the enclosure formed by the two walls and the deep respond pier was dedicated to S. Thomas à Becket, the Martyr-Archbishop of Canterbury. This was probably done when the Aisle was enlarged (1360-1370), but possibly there was a Chapel on this site even before that, as the majority of the Chapels dedicated to this Saint are of the thirteenth century. There are no remains of the Altar, but there is a trefoil-headed piscina, sadly mutilated, in the respond pier, and one fragment of the wooden reredos, which rests on the ledge behind the more modern woodwork which once formed the front of the family pew into which the Chapel was converted for the use of the occupants of Hillfield Hall."<sup>10</sup> This chapel was no doubt taken possession of by the Hawes family soon after the chapels were closed as such, and was occupied by subsequent proprietors of Hillfield Hall.<sup>11</sup> There were several other chapels in the Church, dedicated to various saints and fitted up with altars and the other requisites of worship. These were mostly endowed with land, the rent from which paid the respective

<sup>7</sup>Id. 60, 61.

<sup>8</sup>Dugdale, 940; 1 Vict. Hist. of Warsh., 340, 341; Pemberton, XVI.

<sup>9</sup>Pemberton, 112.

<sup>10</sup>Id., 55-59, 94, 95.

<sup>11</sup>Id. 95, n. 2.

chaplains, who may have served more than one chapel. All the chapels were closed in 1559-60, if not before."<sup>a</sup> A chantry,<sup>a</sup> called the "Chantry of Haliwell" (Holy Well), was founded in or before 1277 by William de Odingsells the younger, then lord of the manor, "for one Priest to celebrate Divine Service for ever in this [Solihull] church" for the souls of the founder, his ancestors and children, "and all the Faithful deceased." This was the origin of the Chapel of St. Alphege, called the Chantry Chapel, the upper of the two chapels on the north side of the chancel.<sup>a</sup> The chantries were suppressed in 1547.<sup>a</sup> "The font belongs to the fourteenth century, but unfortunately has had all marks of antiquity removed."<sup>22</sup> The wall of the South Aisle fell in 1751, and the spire in 1757. These were rebuilt, and much reconstruction has been carried out in modern times.<sup>a</sup>

"There is no mention of any school before the year 1560, but from that time forward we find a Schoolmaster being regularly paid *out of the rents* accruing from certain houses and lands which had formerly *provided for the maintenance of the Chapels of S. Katherine and S. Mary* in the Parish Church, while the revenue of the old Chantry of S. Alphege was applied to the same purpose a few years later (1566)."<sup>b</sup> A hundred years or more later the agreement with the master required him "to teach and instruct all ye sons of any of ye inhabitants of ye sd Parish or orphan children thereof which shalbe sent to ye said school both the Church Catechism (*sic*) and in good maners, and to read and write and understand English, Latine and Greek, and to cast accompt ye best he can."<sup>c</sup> No doubt this had been the aim of the school from the beginning. The school was long known as the "Free School," or "Public School," but is now the "Grammar School." The poet Shen-

<sup>a</sup>Id. 103 n. 2.

<sup>a</sup>A chantry was an endowment to provide for the chanting, or singing of mass. The word was also used for the small building or room used for that purpose.

<sup>v</sup>Pemberton 82.

<sup>s</sup>Id. 83.

<sup>22</sup>Id. 94.

<sup>a</sup>Id., 59, 98, 113.

<sup>b</sup>Id., 149

<sup>c</sup>Id. 153.

stone was educated in this school. It is now an important and flourishing institution.<sup>d</sup> "In very early days the Feoffees had established a second or 'English' department, under an Usher, or assistant Master," for the smaller children.<sup>e</sup>

#### THE NAME

Hawes is a local name and was common in many parts of England. It is derived from "haw," a hedge or an enclosure. Before the common use of surnames, someone who had an enclosure when his neighbors had none or who had a larger enclosure than they, was called, for instance, John at the Haw, or John of the Haw.<sup>f</sup>

In process of time the local association was lost sight of and the word became a true surname. John Hawe<sup>g</sup> was the result, and the name was so written in the earliest records, but the ancestors of the emigrant Edmond early wrote the name Hawes.<sup>h</sup> This may have been due to the fact that they owned several "haws" or enclosures, or may have been simply the result of natural causes operating on the evolution of words. Thomas, the great-great-grandfather of the emigrant, married about 1500, who died in 1558, wrote his name Hawes, and was

<sup>d</sup>2 Vict. Hist. of Warsh., 357-360.

<sup>e</sup>Pemberton 157. Dugdale's account of Solihull may be found at vol. 2, pp. 939-952. See also Hannett, 185-203, and Smith's History of the County of Warwick (1830), between pages 374 and 375, for a picture of High Street, showing a distant view of the church.

<sup>f</sup>Hayes and similar names have a like origin. Bardsley in his "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames" (1901) has the following:

"Hawe, Hawes (1), Haws.—Local, 'at the haw,' i. e., garth, gard, enclosure. . . . 'And eke ther was a polkat in his hawe.' Chaucer, C. T. 12789 . . . ." He gives samples of *del Hawes* (Cambridge 1273), *de la Hawe* (Hants), *in le Hawe* (Kent), *atte Hawe* (Norfolk 1349 & 1362), *del Hawe* (Yorksh. 1379) and in London (p. 366). 5 Murray's "New English Dictionary," 129, defines "haw" as a hedge and a field enclosed by a hedge, and quotes the above passage from Chaucer.

<sup>g</sup>The branch of the family living at Walsall continued to use the name Hawe.

<sup>h</sup>An early instance of this form is John Hawes in Norfolk in 1382 (2 An. Deeds, 385). William de Hawes is found in Berkshire in 1275-1276 (1 Rotuli Hundredorum, 15). Geoffrey Hawys is mentioned in 1326 (Cal. of Close Rolls, Ed. 2, 1323-1327, p. 621) and Walter Hawys in Bedfordshire in 1336 (Id., Ed. 3, 1333-1337, p. 606). In "Abstracts of Deeds of Alcester Abbey," etc. (MS in Birmingham Free Library), 53, Thomas Hawys appears as witness in 1389 to a deed dated Alcester, Warwickshire, conveying lands in Alcester and elsewhere, and at p. 63 John Hawes appears as witness in 1513 to a deed of land in Alcester.

followed by all of his descendants. Another theory is that the name Hawes was a patronymic, being a shortened form of Haweson. The eldest son used it in the early days when the others of the family used Hawe.<sup>4</sup>

#### THE FAMILY

Perhaps the earliest mentions of the name in the vicinity of Warwickshire are of Richard de Hawe of Littleover, Derbyshire, in 1284,<sup>5</sup> and of William de Haw, who about the same time or a little earlier held under William Daubeney one thirtieth of a knight's fee in Bottesford, Leicestershire.<sup>6</sup> The Warwickshire family may be of the same lineage as these.

The first mention found of the Solihull family, which was probably of Angle origin, with intermixture of Saxon and perhaps of Norman blood, is in a deed of 1313 in which Robert Hawe of Solihull agrees with his brother Richard to dig, enclose and maintain two hedges and ditches in the manor of Solihull, and in which mention is made of land there which Richard had bought of Dame Ela de Odingsells, widow of Sir William de Odingsells, Lord of the Manor.<sup>7</sup> In 1322 mention is made of two pence yearly rent which William Hawe used to pay Nicholas Smith for a plot of land in Solihull.<sup>8</sup> In 1323 Richard Hawe of Solihull grants to William atte Birches of the same place three fields in Solihull.<sup>9</sup> In 1326 the same Richard Hawe releases to the same person all his right in those three fields, with livery of seisin.<sup>10</sup> In 1327 William Hawe of Solihull was taxed on the lay subsidy roll the sum of three shillings. Only three persons in Solihull were taxed a larger sum, viz.: William atte Birches, five shillings; John atte Birches, three shillings six pence; and another, three shillings two pence.<sup>11</sup> In 1340

<sup>4</sup>Infra, p. 18.

<sup>5</sup>Cal. of Close Rolls, Ed. I, 1279-1288, p. 280.

<sup>6</sup>Testa de Nevill, 91.

<sup>7</sup>1 An. Deeds, 509. Sir William died in 1295 (Pemberton, 6).

<sup>8</sup>1 An. Deeds, 529.

<sup>9</sup>Id. 452.

<sup>10</sup>Id. 448.

<sup>11</sup>Pemberton, 49. The subsidy in 1327 was for the defense of the Kingdom against the Scotch. The tax was one-twentieth of the movable goods of those subjects whose goods were valued at more than ten shillings. There were exempted "armour, mounture, jewels, and robes of Knights and gentlemen and of their wives, and their vessels of gold and silver and brass." ("Inhabitants of Birmingham," etc. in 1327, by W. B. Bickley, published in 1885).

John, son of Richard Hawe of Solihull, granted to John Jaime two plots of land and moor in Solihull, one adjoining the high-road from Shirley to Solihull and the other at Olton near Olton Hall.<sup>2</sup> Certain knights, the parson of Hochecote (Edgecote) Church and others, including John, son of William Hawe, had committed a trespass in Warwickshire on premises belonging to Ranulph de Lecroft. Upon his petition the matter had been referred to Ralph Basset of Drayton and others as special justices, but upon representation that the offence was not of sufficient enormity to warrant such action, in 1340 it was ordered that the case be tried in the regular course at common law.<sup>3</sup> The character of the leading participants and the fact that Lecroft's cattle were driven off, houses broken into, and goods and chattels to the value of £100 and deeds and other muniments carried off, indicate that the affair was one of those raids of a factional nature not uncommon at that period, and the reversal of the order for a special tribunal shows that the actors had powerful friends at court. "Adam de Haw is witness to a deed 23 Edw. III (1349-50) in the Archer Collection."<sup>4</sup> In 1356 Master John atte Birches, carpenter, gave a letter of attorney to John, son of William Hawe, authorizing him to deliver seisin to Richard atte Wode of Solihull, the elder, and Avice his wife, of three fields in Solihull.<sup>5</sup> These are doubtless the three fields conveyed in 1323 and 1326 to William atte Birches. In 1366 and 1367 John Hawe is a witness to deeds of land in Tanworth, Solihull and Knowle.<sup>6</sup> In 1368 John, son of William Hawe of Solihull, granted to John le Cook of the same place a plot of land in the borough of Solihull.<sup>7</sup> In 1373 John, son of William Hawe, of Solihull, granted to Thomas Pee of the same place a piece of land with houses on Smith Street (now High Street), Solihull, paying a customary rent out of part of the premises to the Wardens of the goods of the Blessed Mary of Solihull.<sup>8</sup> Customary rent for the houses in High Street is still paid to the Governors of

<sup>2</sup>3 An. Deeds, 394; P. E. Martineau.

<sup>4</sup>Cal. of Close Rolls, Ed. III, 1339-41, p. 451.

<sup>5</sup>Hamper on Dugdale.

<sup>6</sup>2 An. Deeds, 451.

<sup>7</sup>5 id., 556 & 557.

<sup>8</sup>2 id., 479.

<sup>9</sup>1 id., 441.

Solihull United Charities, who hold "the goods of the Blessed Mary of Solihull," that is, of one of the chapels endowed in Solihull Church.<sup>a</sup> Between 1399 and 1412 William Hawe and others gave to the Chantry in Solihull Church one messuage and 40 acres of land lying in Solihull, called Caldeford's tenement, but the grant, having been made without Royal license, was forfeited to the King in 1412.<sup>b</sup> In 1420-1421 William Hawe was a witness to the release by Thomas Burdet, Knight, to William de Bishopdon, Knight, of his right in the manor of Lapworth Hall.<sup>c</sup> In 1413 royal license was given to Walter Cook, a priest, William Wynnewik, William Hawe and others to form the Guild of Knowle, and William Hawe and Margaret, his wife, were among the original members, being named next after Walter Cook, Adam Cook and William Wynnewike.<sup>d</sup> In 1460 Thomas Hawe and Margaret, his wife, and in 1461 John Hawe, "wheler," and Johanna, his wife, were members.<sup>e</sup> In 1459 the same John Hawe, described as of Solihull, had been a witness to a deed of John Greswold, son and heir of John Greswold of Rowington, to Richard his brother, rector of Tanworth, and others, of lands in Olton.<sup>f</sup> In 1468 John Hawe of Solihull entered himself as a member of the Guild for his own benefit "and for the soul of Elizabeth, his wife,"<sup>g</sup> and the same year appear John Haw of Solihull, "bocher," and Johanna, his wife.<sup>h</sup> In 1469 Thomas Hawe and Catherine, his wife, appear as members "and for the souls of Richard and Isabel."<sup>i</sup> In 1486 John

<sup>a</sup>P. E. Martineau.

<sup>b</sup>2 Dugdale, 947; Pemberton, 83. Caldeford's tenement was at or near Eastcote about 2½ m. E. of Solihull church (Pemberton 45 n. 5, 86 n. 9).

<sup>c</sup>4 An. Deeds, 313.

<sup>d</sup>Register of the Guild of Knowle, edited by W. B. Bickley (1894), pp. 1 & 10. The Introduction (p. I) defines a guild of this sort as an association of persons for mutual aid, benefit and protection. Among the objects were religious worship, sick aid, charitable aid, burying the dead, masses for souls, &c. This guild had at one time over 3000 members from the neighboring region in Warwickshire (p. XIV). It was dissolved in 1535.

<sup>e</sup>Id. 37 & 40.

<sup>f</sup>Records of Rowington, by J. W. Ryland (1896), appendix, p. 137, No. 34; 2 An. Deeds, 397.

<sup>g</sup>Reg. of Guild of Knowle, 64.

<sup>h</sup>Id. 61.

<sup>i</sup>Id. 66.

Hawe, son of Thomas Hawe of Shelly, was a member.<sup>9</sup> Robert Hawe and Alice his wife of Solihull were members in 1498<sup>a</sup> and Richard Hawe and Elizabeth of the same place, in 1500.<sup>4</sup> In 1520, Thomas Hawe of Solihull was a member,<sup>1</sup> and in 1526 Richard Hawe, gent.<sup>2</sup> An inquisition post mortem was taken Aug. 10th, 1486, in the case of John Hugford, Esq., who had died the previous winter, from which it appears that he had enfeoffed Thomas Hawe and others of lands in Warwickshire to the use of his will.<sup>1</sup> The following may be of the Solihull Hawes family: In 1469 members of the Guild of Knowle were Thomas Hauos and Katrina, his wife, and for the souls of Richard and Isabelle, and for the souls of Nicholas and Joan, parents;<sup>m</sup> in 1496 Thomas Hawe and Agnes of Killingworth, Northamptonshire;<sup>n</sup> in 1511 Richard Hawe and Joan, his wife, and for the soul of Agnes;<sup>o</sup> in 1483 William Hawce (the editor says perhaps Hawte) and Agnes his wife;<sup>p</sup> in 1486 Robert Hawys and Johanna, his wife, of Kington,<sup>q</sup> and for the soul of William.

In 1473 Thomas Beynam of Henley gave power of attorney to John Hawe, "son of Thomas de Gerardes," and William Hawe, barber, to deliver seisin of land, etc., in Olton to Robert Greswold of Solihull. Thomas de Gerardes indicates Thomas, son of Gerard. Gerard was not a common name in Solihull, but occurs in the de Limesi and de Odingsells families.<sup>r</sup> Grazebrook's Heraldry of Worcestershire (vol. 1, p. 266) gives the Hawes arms in Yardley Church quartered by Greswolde. The

<sup>9</sup>Id. 93.

<sup>a</sup>Id. 127.

<sup>4</sup>Id. 143.

<sup>1</sup>Id. 250.

<sup>2</sup>Id. 256.

<sup>1</sup>Calendar of Inquisitions, Henry 7th, v. 1, p. 54. Hugford had been for a time steward of the Earl of Warwick (Norris, 19).

<sup>m</sup>Reg. of Guild of Knowle, 66.

<sup>n</sup>Id. 119.

<sup>o</sup>Id. 195.

<sup>p</sup>Id., 89.

<sup>q</sup>Id. 96. Kington (usually called Kingsford) was an ancient place partly in Solihull. (<sup>2</sup> Dugdale, 976.)

<sup>r</sup>2 An. Deeds, 397; Pemberton, 8.



Worcester probate records show the death in Yardley in 1588/4 of a Hawes.

### HILLFIELD HALL FAMILY

The Visitation of Warwickshire<sup>a</sup> carries the family back through two Thomases prior to Thomas who married Ann Greswold in 1465, and who would have been born about 1440, his father about 1415, and the first Thomas named in the Visitation about 1390. The Bridges MS.<sup>1</sup> gives the arms of John Hawe of Shelly (the same as those of later members of the family) as in Hillfield Hall and assigns him the date of 1371. Perhaps it was to him that the arms were granted. He was a man of consequence, since Dugdale in a MS copied by Hamper says that he was a commissioner for collecting a subsidy in Warwickshire in 6 Henry 4 (1404/5). Dugdale in this MS says the family had existed there from 32 Ed. 3 (1358/9), but the regnal year may be a clerical error for 23 Ed. 3 (1349/50), when according to Hamper, Adam de Hawe was witness to a deed in the Archer collection.<sup>2</sup> As seen above (p. 10), the family is mentioned still earlier, in 1313, when Robert Hawe and his brother Richard execute a deed. It seems probable that the first Thomas was the son of John. The latter may have been the son of William Hawe, who is mentioned in 1322 and is on the lay subsidy roll of 1327, or of Richard. In 1340 John, son of Richard Hawe of Solihull, is mentioned, and about the same time John, son of William Hawe. John, son of William Hawe, is also mentioned in 1356 and at later dates. In 1460 Thomas Hawe and his wife, Margaret, are mentioned, and in 1469 Thomas Hawe and his wife, Catharine. These may have been the first and second Thomas and their respective wives or the first Thomas and his two wives. It seems probable that the wife of

<sup>a</sup>There were Visitations of Warwickshire made by the Herald's College in 1563 and 1619, to determine the right of families to bear arms, in which the pedigrees of the arms-bearing families are given. A copy of the Hawes pedigree of 1563 and the original of that of 1619 (signed by Edmond Hawes) are in the Herald's College, London. Copies of these are given *infra*, pp. 44-46. In the British Museum are several MSS giving copies of these Visitations combined. One of them (Harleian MS 1167) is printed in Vol. 12 of the Harleian Society Publications, the Hawes pedigree appearing at pp. 404 and 405.

<sup>1</sup>*Infra*, p. 43½.

<sup>2</sup>*Supra*, p. 11.

the second Thomas was Joan.<sup>v</sup> We may construct the line thus:

- 1 Richard Hawes (1313) or William Hawes (1322).
- 2 John Hawes (1371).
- 3 Thomas Hawes (b. about 1390); perhaps married first Margaret and second Catharine.
- 4 Thomas Hawes (b. about 1415); probably married Joan.
- 5 Thomas Hawes (b. about 1440); married Ann Greswold in 1465.
- 6 Thomas Hawes (b. after 1465); married Johanna Rainsford about 1500.
- 7 Thomas Hawes (b. about 1500); married Elizabeth Brome in 1527.
- 8 William Hawes (b. 1531); married Ursula Colles in 1562.
- 9 Edmond Hawes (b. after 1562); married Jane Porter before 1600.
- 10 Edmond Hawes, the emigrant; b. 1612.

Numbers 1 and 2 are conjectural as ancestors. They were undoubtedly members of the family. As already stated, John was probably the son of either Richard or William, while the first Thomas was probably the son of John, but it is possible that John died without issue and his property passed to a brother or nephew. With the first Thomas the line becomes established, only the wives of the first two being conjectural. Some special account will now be given of these men, beginning with number 5.

5 THOMAS HAWES, married Ann, daughter of John Greswold of Solihull, in 1465.<sup>w</sup> In 1486 he was one of the feoffees of John Hugford, Esq., to the use of his will respecting land

<sup>v</sup>Dugdale (Rawl, MS D 806, in Bodleian Library, Oxford, folios 38 and 40) says that Thomas Haw of Solihull, gentleman, living in 1467, married Joan ———, and had John Hawe of Solihull, living in 1467, who married Joan, daughter and coheir of Thomas Haxall of Solihull, removed to Walsall and was the ancestor of the Walsall branch. It seems probable that this Thomas was also the father of Thomas (being his oldest son) who married Ann Greswold.

<sup>w</sup>Bridges MS, *infra*, p. 43½; Hannett, 199, 200; Pemberton, 38, 39, 42. The date of the marriage (1311) given by Pemberton, is erroneous as shown *infra*, p. 31 n. s., and the statement by him that Ann was the daughter of John Greswold of Kenilworth is also erroneous (*infra*, p. 66). Her father was 4th in descent from him.

in Warwickshire.<sup>a</sup> In the suit of Margaret Hawe against Robert Coleman and John Hikker, ascribed to the period between 1486 and 1493 or between 1504 and 1515, it appears that she was the daughter of Thomas Hawe, late of Solihull, gentleman,<sup>b</sup> who had purchased lands and tenements there of John Trussell, Esq., called "Prattes Farme," to the value of £8 4s., and had conveyed them in trust to John Smyth, late of Coventry, gentleman, and Robert Coleman, and by his will had directed the grantees, out of the profits, to pay the plaintiff £20 4s. on her marriage; that Thomas Hawe and John Smyth had died; that Robert Coleman outlived them and that the deeds, land and rents were demised to Hikker, who had had in his hands for three years past the £20 4s. after Smyth died; that Margaret was of the age of 23 years and had demanded the money, but payment had been refused.<sup>c</sup> Margaret appears clearly to be the daughter of the Thomas Hawes we are now considering. "Prattes Farme" remained in the family and was owned by Edmond Hawes, father of the emigrant, in 1627.<sup>d</sup> In 1486 Thomas Hawes is described as of Shelly, when his son John is named as a member of the Guild of Knowle.<sup>e</sup> Hannett and Pemberton say that he died in 1540, but give no authority. His burial does not appear in the Solihull Parish Register, and it is thought they may have been misled by the will of Sir Thomas Hawes filed at Lichfield, April 6, 1540, who, however, was Vicar of Weston, Northamptonshire, and as a priest of that date would not have been married. The vicar's will mentions a brother John and a brother Harrie. If Thomas (No.

<sup>a</sup>Calendar of Inquisitions, Henry VII, vol. I, pp. 54 and 55, No. 136.

<sup>b</sup>At this period the term gentlemen included those below the grade of noblemen and above that of yeomen (small farmers). Knights and esquires were gentlemen of the higher order. Country gentlemen had considerable estates and were free from the necessity of physical labor. Gentlemen were entitled to and usually had coats of arms. The younger sons of noblemen, the eldest sons of knights, justices of the peace, barristers, etc., were esquires. (See the terms "gentleman," "esquire," and "yeoman" in Encyclopaedia Britannica, Murray's New English Dictionary and Century Dictionary.)

<sup>c</sup>Early Chancery Proceedings, vol. III, Bundle 139, No. 63, Public Record Office, London.

<sup>d</sup>*Infra*, p. 38.

<sup>e</sup>Reg. of Guild of Knowle, 93.

5) had lived till 1540, he would have nearly reached, if he had not completed, a century.<sup>o</sup>

*Children:*

6 THOMAS, m. Johanna Rainsford.

RICHARD,<sup>d</sup> m. Elizabeth

JOHN.

MARGARET.

Probably others.

6 THOMAS HAWES, married Johanna Rainsford<sup>e</sup> about 1500; buried Aug. 26, 1558. The entry in the parish records is: "The six and twentithe day of Auguste, Thoms Hawe, gent." She was no doubt the "Mrs. Jone Hawes" who was buried Oct. 10, 1559. Nov. 10, 1501, Thomas Spencer of Kenilworth granted to Thomas Hawe and others, gentlemen, four crofts in Solihull, in trust for charitable purposes. The deed described the second of these as lying "in breadth between land of said Hawe on one side and of the rector of Solihull on the other, and in length between the rector's land on one side and the royal road from Solihull to Warwick on the other." Among the witnesses to this deed were "John Greswolde, arm," and "Roger Greswold of Kenilworth, gent."<sup>f</sup> In 1535-6, Thomas Hawes, with Agnes Lyttle, late prioress, and John Hall of Hatton, was collector of rents of the dissolved Abbey of Wrox-

<sup>e</sup>Hannett (*infra*, p. 31) says he was a lawyer, no doubt a solicitor and not a barrister. It is probable that his grandson Thomas and the latter's son William were also lawyers.

<sup>f</sup>The will of Richard Hawe of Warwick, gentleman, dated Feb. 20, 1546-7, was proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury the last day of March, 1547 (31 Alen). He mentions his deceased wife Elizabeth, his brother Thomas Hawe, to whom he gives "my best ring and my night gowne of white," and his nephew Thomas Hawe, to whom he gives a furred gown. He gives legacies to various servants and others, including "to Richard Bowkley my servant 8s. a year for twenty years next ensuing after my decease." The residue of his estate he leaves for the saying of masses for his soul, his wife's soul and all Christian souls. He mentions no children. The will directs his burial in the Church of St. Mary, Warwick. He names as his executors Thomas Oken of Warwick, mercer, and Richard Hawe of Solihull, "my kinsman." In 1500 he and his wife, described as of Solihull, were members of the Guild of Knowle (Reg. of Guild of Knowle, 143) and in 1526 he is again named as a member and styled "gentleman" (Id. 256). In 1545-6 he was auditor of a religious guild in Warwick (1 Dugdale, 463.)

<sup>g</sup>The name is also written Raynford and Raynsford.

<sup>h</sup>Hamper on Dugdale.

all.<sup>9</sup> His appointment was perhaps due to the fact that his son in 1527 had married Elizabeth Brome, niece of Jocosa Brome, a former prioress of the Abbey. In 1520 he was a member of the Guild of Knowle.<sup>3</sup> The lineage of Johanna Rainsford has not been traced. There was a family of Great Tew (Tew Magna) in Oxfordshire, descended from John Rainsford of Rainsford Hall, Lancashire to which she may have belonged. The arms were: *Argent, a cross sable*. In Lancashire the family is found as early as the time of Henry 4 (1399-1413). The probate records of the sixteenth century (Lichfield, Worcester and Somerset House) show Rainsfords of the town of Warwick and of the counties of Worcester and Gloucester, but they do not disclose Johanna or Joane.<sup>4</sup>

*Children:*

- 7 THOMAS, m. Elizabeth Brome.  
 RICHARD,<sup>1</sup> m. Margery (probably Hall).  
 WILLIAM,<sup>1</sup> m. —, and had Thomas.  
 ELIZABETH, m. —, and had Anne.

<sup>9</sup>Records of Wroxall Abbey and Manor, with those of the Parish added, by J. W. Ryland (1903), 103. The name is here written Hawes.

<sup>3</sup>Reg. of Guild of Knowle, 250.

<sup>4</sup>Visitation of Oxfordshire, 5 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 165, 166; Visit. of Warwickshire, 12 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 48-50; Visit. of Gloucestershire, 21 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 227; Burke's General Armory, 842.

<sup>5</sup>The will of Richard Hawe of Pillerton Hersey (in the will called Pillardington and Nether Pillardington), Co. Warwick, dated May 30, 1559, was filed at Lichfield, Jan. 17, 1564-5, but he must have died soon after its date, since the inventory of his personal estate, amounting to £113 15s. 4d., was taken Sept. 5, 1559. He mentions his wife Margery, son Thomas (under 16 years of age), cousin (that is nephew) William Hawes (to whom he gives a colt "now goyng" in Wedgnock Park), brother William and the latter's son Thomas, "Jane Robyns my base daughter," daughters "Jose" and "Johanne" (under 21 years of age), his deceased father (not named), and his daughter "Joyse." He speaks of silver spoons remaining in the hands of his mother (not named) and his brother Thomas. The will contains the following clauses: "Also I geve & bequeathe to my cosyn Elizabeth Hawse daughter of my seyde brother Thomas foure pounds in recompense of the xxvi. viiid. which I had of hers to be employed in malte to her pferment abute iiii yers past Itm I wyll my seyde wyfe shall pay yerely unto Rychard Bowkeley of Tonworth hys annuittie geven unto hym by my uncle Rychard Hawe decessed duryng the time lymited by my seyde uncles wyll." He speaks in his will of holding the unexpired term in a lease of the parsonage of Pillerton and provides that if before the expiration of the term his wife shall have died and his children shall have deceased unmarried, "soe that non of theym remayn alyve," then the unexpired term of the lease and all his goods and chattels that shall remain shall be "equally devyded amongs the chyldren of my seyde brother Thomas and my seyde brother Wyllm & amonges the brethern & chyldren of

CATHERINE, m. William Smallwood, Nov. 23, 1539.<sup>kk</sup>

ANN, m. — Gibbons.

Perhaps others.

7 THOMAS HAWES, married first in 1527 Elizabeth Brome, daughter of Nicholas Brome, Esq., Lord of the Manor of Bad-desley Clinton, and second, Elinor ——. In 1533/4 he (or perhaps his father) was among those who gave carriage of timber for the repair of the church.<sup>k</sup> In 1536 he, called Thomas Hawes the Younger, received 40s. for collecting the farms, and rents of tenants by the year, of the dissolved Abbey of Wroxall.<sup>l</sup> March 6, 1548/9, he (styled gentleman) and others were made trustees of ten pounds given by John Howman, alias Feckman or Feckenham, late Vicar of Solihull, to be loaned to the poor of the parish. This amount was increased by subsequent benefactions to £45.<sup>m</sup> In 1566 he agreed to supplement the available income of the free school, then or shortly before established in Solihull, by the sum of 10 shillings. Five others agreed to give similar sums, his name being second on the list of sub-

my syster in lawe Joyse hall." He made his wife executrix. The will further declares: "I make & ordaine ov'scers of thys my last Wyll & Testament my brother Thomas Hawes & Rychard Haul of Ildecote [Idlicote] my brother in lawe." This will had been proved at Worcester in 1559. Pillerton Hersey is not far from Stratford-on-Avon and Idlicote is near it. (Bartholomew's Gazetteer; 1 Dugdale, 606-614.) Wedgnock Park was near Warwick (1 Dugdale, 372, 379).

Murray's New English Dictionary, vol. 2 (C), p. 1097, gives the following definition: "Cousin."—"†1. A collateral relative more distant than a brother or sister; a kinsman or kinswoman, a relative; formerly very frequently applied to a nephew or niece. Obs." "†b. In legal language formerly often applied to the next of kin, or the person to whom one is next of kin, including direct ancestors and descendants more remote than parents and children."

In vol. 7 (O), p. 322, is the following definition: "Overseer."—"1. †b. A person (formerly) appointed by a testator to supervise or assist the executor or executors of the will. Obs." The overseer had no title to the estate. The title was in the executor. But he might call the court's attention to delinquencies of the executor, and the latter felt at liberty to call upon him for advice or assistance. Overseers were sometimes given legacies in the will to compensate them for their trouble. In Murray the following illustration is given from Sir Thomas Elyot, who wrote in the first half of the 16th Century: "The Busshope [bishop] \* \* is in the case that overseers of testimentes be in England, for he shall have leve to looke, so that he meddle not."

<sup>kk</sup>*Infra*, p. 63.

<sup>k</sup>Pemberton, 59.

<sup>l</sup>Records of Wroxall Abbey, p. 110.

<sup>m</sup>Pemberton, 68, 68 n. 1, 200, 203.

scribers." He was no doubt one of the "feoffees," or trustees, of the school funds.<sup>o</sup> Money at that time was more than ten times its present value.<sup>p</sup> He was buried June 12, 1574, the entry in the parish records being "The XIIth daye of June Thomas Hawe, gent." He left a will dated May 20, and proved and filed at Lichfield Oct. 27, 1574. The inventory of his personal estate, amounting to £123 17s. 4d.,<sup>q</sup> was taken June 15, 1574. His will directs that he be buried in the Chapel of St. Clement<sup>r</sup> within the parish church of Solihull. It recites that by a deed dated in 1571 or 1572 he had given "to my welbeloved cosyn Thomas Greswolde<sup>s</sup> gentleman to my trusty frends Thomas Waryng gentleman and Barnaby Holbache yoman" certain lands in Solihull, in trust to distribute yearly forever to the poor people of Solihull the rents and profits thereof (the chief rent and 16 pence yearly excepted), beginning on "that day twelmoneth that shall fortune my buryall, to be the saide pore people beyng then present in the said churche knelyng & saying the lords pyer for my sole my wyffs sole or my chylidrens soles & all christen soles."<sup>t</sup> In case the grantees should fail to carry out the trust, he directs his executors to do so. He also recites that by an "inventore," or deed, dated Sept. 1, 1562, between himself on the one part and Margaret Colles, widow, and Edmund Colles, Esq., her son, on the other, it was stipulated that certain real estate should be held to such uses and intents as to the remainder thereof (that is, after a life estate) as he should appoint and limit by his last will. This was no doubt the marriage settlement of his son William and Ursula Colles, daughter of Margaret, and the life estate was

<sup>a</sup>Id. 160.

<sup>o</sup>Pages 7-9, *supra*.

<sup>p</sup>51 Dict. of Nat. Biog. 371, where money is said to have had in 1600 ten times its present value. In 1630 money is said in the Introduction to Winthrop's Journal (Hosmer's edition), 15, to have eight times its present value.

<sup>q</sup>This is the sum of the items. The amount given in the inventory is £123, 17s. 8d.

<sup>r</sup>Perhaps the same now called the Chapel of St. Thomas à Becket.

<sup>s</sup>They were second cousins. Pemberton, 42, 170; *infra*, p. 67.

<sup>t</sup>This seems to indicate that he continued to hold the beliefs of the Roman Catholic Church, in which his childhood and youth had passed, but he evidently clung to the parish church, which became Protestant, although two of the rectors, John Howman (1544-54) and John Bavand (1560-70), failed to conform, or secretly retained the old faith. (Pemberton, 68-70, 71). His son William was a sincere Protestant.

for their benefit. He then states that with the consent of his son and heir William, he had previously conveyed certain of those lands to his daughter Elizabeth and Thomas Jackson, her husband. As to the rest of the lands covered by the said "inventore," or deed, he states that lately some ambiguity and doubt had arisen between him, his wife and his son William concerning the right and title of the jointure and dower of his wife in all his lands in the parish of Solihull, and that they had submitted the matter to the arbitration of the said Thomas Greswold, who had made a written award dated Dec. 16, 1578, providing that his son William should pay to his wife during her natural life an annuity of five pounds in recompense for her jointure and dower. The lands no doubt descended to his son and heir William, subject to the terms of the award. As regards his goods and chattels, he gave to the poor money box of Solihull twelve pence, to his son William certain household furniture, etc., to his godson Thomas Hawes, "sonne of the sayd Wyllm Hawes my yongest amblyng mare fole and to ev'y of thyr other chylthern an ewe shyppe or V s. in money," to each of his daughter Hatley's children a ewe sheep or five shillings in money; to his daughter Margaret a cow and a pair of hempen sheets and to each of her children a ewe or five shillings in money, in case his said daughter and her husband Walter Chamber did not vex or trouble his executors about any of his goods or chattels, and on the same condition as to his daughter Elizabeth and her husband Thomas Jackson, he gave to Elizabeth a cow, the worst feather bed, and a pair of hempen sheets, to her son Thomas a weaning calf and to each of his brothers and sisters a ewe sheep or five shillings in money. He gave to his sister Elizabeth a two-year-old heifer and to her daughter Anne a year-old heifer calf, to his sister Catharine Smallwood a heifer calf or a steer calf of one year of age, and to his sister Anne Gibbons a yearling calf. He gave to Isabell Whetnall a weaning calf, to each of his other servants 40 pence, and to Christopher Milward's wife 20 pence. The rest of his goods and chattels not bequeathed, after payment of his debts, legacies and funeral expenses, he gave to his wife Elinor, whom he made sole executrix. He appointed Thomas Waring and Roger "Eyewyt," gentleman, stewards of the City of Coventry, overseers, and gave each of them 40 shillings to see his will



and testament performed. The will is signed "Thomas Hawes," but has no witnesses. The Clerk of the Lichfield Probate Registry writes: "It is possible that the will may be holograph as it appears to be in the same hand as the signature." This inference is strengthened by the absence of witnesses. That Elinor was his second wife and not the mother of his son William appears from the fact that there was a controversy between them as to the dower or jointure of Elinor, as well as from the Visitation. The printed Visitation describes the first and last Thomas as of Edlicot, and Pemberton (p. 42) makes three of them of that place, but from the copy in the Herald's College, it appears that only the last Thomas was so described. If the description is not an error, it may be that he had an estate at Idlicote (near Pillerton Hersey where his brother Richard resided) and was described as of that estate instead of his principal one at Solihull. The Visitation says that Edlicot was in Hemlingford hundred, but no similar name is found in that hundred. Dugdale, in a copy made by him of the Visitation of Warwickshire of 1563, states that Thomas Hawes was of Idlicote.\*

*Children by his first wife, in order of Visitation of  
Warwickshire:*

8 WILLIAM, son and heir, born 1531; m. 1562, Ursula Colles, born 1545.

CONSTANCE, 1st daughter, m. before 1563 Thomas Shepherd,<sup>o</sup> yeoman; not mentioned in her father's will; probably died before him.

ELIZABETH, 2nd daughter, m. Thomas Jackson<sup>o</sup>, and had Thomas and other children.

---

\*Rawlinson MS. D. 806, folio 39, Bodleian Library, Oxford.

<sup>o</sup>The Visit. of Warwickshire (12 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 405) gives the name Speherd, but this is evidently an error.

<sup>o</sup>In 1639 Thomas Jackson held of the Lord of the Manor of Solihull one house and backside by suit of court and the yearly rent of 3s. 6d. (Add MS 17, 770 in Br. Museum). From manuscript notes of Sir Simon Archer made Aug. 28, 1638, it appears that Thomas Jackson had held by copy of Court Roll a tenement and five parcels of land within the Borough of Solihull for the term of 51 years from Oct. 19, 1602, at the yearly rent of 5s. 9d., but that they had passed into the possession of John Fifield (MS 27, 972 in Br. Museum, folio 22). From the same notes it appears that Thomas Jackson of Solihull and his son Thomas held by lease from Thomas Throckmorton, Esq., for the term of their lives, a small parcel of rough or marsh ground enclosed by the waste at the yearly rent of 12d. (Id. fol. 22b). In 1639 and 1639 the Rev. Luke Smith, rector of Solihull, held and occupied a house and backside in the Borough, that had been Thomas

MARGARET, 3rd daughter, m. Walter Chamber, and had issue.

A DAUGHTER, m. ——— Hatley and had issue.

The MS of the 1563 Visitation of Warwickshire (which is a copy) and other copies of documents erroneously give the name of Thomas Hawes's first wife as Browne, or Broune. Dugdale (v. 2, p. 971) says he found the name so erroneously written in public records. He gives the correct name as Brome, and so does the printed Visitation of Warwickshire<sup>a</sup> when giving the pedigree of the family. The arms of the family contain three sprigs of broom.<sup>b</sup> Among arms in the windows of Solihull Church in the time of Dugdale were those of Hawes impaling Brome.<sup>c</sup> Whenever the name is found used by members of the family, it is written Brome. Norris in his book on Baddesley Clinton, written with access to the extant family papers, gives the name as Brome (pp. 28, 48-53, and *passim*), stating that Elizabeth, daughter of Nicholas Brome, became the wife of Thomas Hawes of Solihull, and furnishing copies of inscriptions in the Baddesley Clinton Church. The will of Rauffe Brome of Woodlow, Esquire, dated March 18, 1567, and proved and filed at Worcester, May —, 1567, who was a son of Nicholas Brome, mentions his brother-in-law Thomas Hawes of Solihull, and makes him and his cousin (that is, nephew) William Hawes, gentleman, two of his executors.<sup>d</sup> The will of William Hawes mentions his cousin Reginald Brome. It seems extremely probable that Elizabeth, the first wife of Thomas Hawes, had died before the date of her brother's will, since he does not mention her, but does mention her sister,

Jackson's, at a rental of one shilling and 9 pence half-yearly (Id. fols. 46, 97b). In 1644 Mr. Smith paid 13d. half yearly for them (Id. fol. 121b). In 1627 Thomas Jackson paid for his house in the Borough 21d. half yearly (Id. fol. 76b). In the parish outside of the Borough he paid 6d. half yearly for a hopyard (Id. fol. 80). Thomas Jackson held, probably in 1629 or 1638, of the Lord of the Manor a close lying near Dresseltree by indenture, at a rental of 6s. per year, the term of which began after the death of Katherine Bowater, Sept. 12, 1586 (Id. fol. 112).

<sup>a</sup>Harl. Soc. Pubs., vol. 12, pp. 96-98.

<sup>b</sup>Dugdale, in a copy made by him of the Visitation of Warwickshire of 1563, gives her name as Broome, and her residence as Woodlows (which her father had owned and her brother obtained) instead of Woodhouse or Wodhosse in the Visitation, a name not existing in the County. (Rawlinson MS D 806, folio 39, in Bodleian Library, Oxford).

<sup>c</sup>Dugdale, 944.

<sup>d</sup>Page 44, *infra*.

"Joyes" Brome. Indeed, it is probable that she had died before Aug. 26, 1551, the date of the will of her sister Constance Ferrers, who does not mention her but does mention her sister, "Joyes."<sup>b</sup> Dugdale (v. 2, p. 974) on the authority of Henry Ferrers,<sup>c</sup> who had observed in Queen Elizabeth's time monuments and monumental inscriptions defaced in Dugdale's time, says that Nicholas Brome was buried within the Church door at Baddesley Clinton at the very entrance, and that "under the next stone lyeth Elizabeth, one of his daughters, wife to Thomas Hawe of Solihull."<sup>d</sup> Hamper adds: "Her portraiture in brasse is likewise gone."<sup>e</sup> The genealogies generally describe

<sup>b</sup>Norris, 137-9. This will was proved in P. C. C. Oct. 17, 1551 (Buck 39).

<sup>c</sup>A learned antiquary, great-great-grandson of Nicholas Brome, who gave much aid to Dugdale. He was born 1549 and died 1633 (Dict. of Nat. Biog. v. 18, p. 385; Norris, 120-123). He was for 70 years Lord of the Manor of Baddesley Clinton.

<sup>d</sup>See also Norris, 49.

<sup>e</sup>The same arms were borne by the Haweses of Warwickshire, Staffordshire (chiefly Walsall) and Weston and Stoke Albany in Northamptonshire (Burke's General Armory, 468), and similar arms by some Hayes families (Id. 472). The Warwickshire family had no crest, but the Walsall family adopted a crest:—A griffin's head erased, or, beaked (or armed) gules (Willmore's History of Walsall, 288; Visitation of Staffordshire in 1663 and 1664; Harl. MS 6104, fol. 16; 63 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 122). The common arms seem to imply a common origin for these families. The Walsall branch evidently sprang from Solihull, but the pedigree in Willmore is certainly erroneous. He states that Thomas Hawes of Solihull who married Elizabeth Brome, was the father of George Hawe of Caldmore (Walsall), whom, together with his brother Nicholas, he makes prominent in 1540, but Thomas Hawes and Elizabeth Brome were not married till 1527. He was buried in Solihull. His will (*infra*, p. 47) mentions no sons George, Nicholas, John or Richard, attributed to him by Willmore. The wills of Thomas Hawe and George Hawe, of Walsall, filed at Lichfield, respectively July 11, 1553, and Dec. 14, 1558, do not give the name of their father, but state that he was buried in Walsall. This George is evidently the one who, according to Willmore, was son of Thomas Hawes of Solihull and Elizabeth Brome, his wife. In his will George Hawe speaks of lands in Warwickshire which he had by his father's will. These he gave to his mother for life and after her death to George, son of his brother Thomas. He mentions no children. The connection with Solihull was evidently earlier than the Thomas of Solihull mentioned in this note. This connection appears in a pedigree in the handwriting of Sir Wm. Dugdale, preserved in the Bodleian Library at Oxford (Rawlinson MS D 806, folios 38 & 40). It is dated June 30, 1663, when he was head of the Herald's College, and was proved, he says, partly by some old deeds and partly by the testimony of Simon Montford (whose wife was a Hawe) and others. Dugdale states that Thomas Haw of Solihull, gentleman, married Joan —, and had John Hawe of Solihull, who married Joan, daughter and coheir of Thomas Haxall of Solihull. Dugdale gives the date 1467 to both Thomas and John, probably the date of a deed in which the father and son were mentioned. John Hawe and Joan had three sons: Nicholas, a barrister of the Inner Temple, who died without issue; Thomas,

Nicholas Brome as of Woodhouse. This is an error. He had no estate of that name, but one of Woodlow or Woodloes.

8 WILLIAM HAWES, married Ursula, daughter of William Colles of Leigh, Worcestershire, in 1562. He was buried Oct.

who married Joyce (or Jeys), daughter of — Gosway, of Walsall; and George, a barrister of the Inner Temple, who died without issue, and whose will dated in 1555 was filed in 1558 as above stated. Thomas Hawe (will 1553) and Joyce had, besides other children, George Hawe of Bloxwich (near Walsall), gentleman, who married Elizabeth, daughter of William Hunt of Smethwick, Co. Stafford. From this last mentioned George the Walsall line proceeded. Dugdale is corroborated by the will of Joan Hawe, of Walsall, widow, dated Sept. 20 and proved at Lichfield Dec. 14, 1558. She requests to be buried in the Church of Allhallows, Walsall, in St. John's Chapel, near to John Hawe her late husband, but if there be no room there, then in St. Clements Chapel near to her father and mother. She gives her dwelling house and certain lands to her son Nicholas Hawe and a house to George Hawe (doubtless her grandson), and she makes gifts to Joan Wollaston and Agnes Curtis, her daughters, to "Joys" Hawe, widow of her son Thomas Hawe, to Thomas Wollaston and John Curtis (doubtless her sons-in-law), and to George Wollaston and George Curtis (probably her grandsons). She provided that if her son Nicholas should have no heirs, then the land given to him should go to the heirs of her two daughters. She made Nicholas Hawe, Thomas Wollaston and Agnes Curtis her executors. The inventory of her personal estate was dated Dec. 8, 1558, and amounted to £84 6s. The will of John Haw of Walsall was proved at Lichfield Nov. 28, 1541, but it no longer exists on the files. Thomas Wollaston of Walsall married Joan, daughter of John Hawe of the same place, June 13, 1541 (Visitations of Staffordshire, p. 320, edited by H. S. Grazebrook). It also seems (unless possibly the defendant and the testator of 1541 were the same person) that other members of the Hawe family, sprung from Solihull, resided in Walsall in early times, for in the suit of Laurence Robenson and Elyn, his wife, against John Hawe, organ player, of Walsall, ascribed to the period between 1515 and 1529, the plaintiffs alleged that they were seised of two closes in Solihull, one containing by estimation 30 acres of pasture and the other 10 acres of arable ground, called "Whitlokks Feld" and "Walcroft," and had for 17 years and more peaceably taken the profits thereof, but that the defendant was claiming the said lands. The defendant in his answer says that his grandfather John Hawe was seised of "Whitlokks Feld" and conveyed it to Thomas Hutton, Justice of the Common Pleas, John Smith and others to the use and behoof of the grantor and his heirs; that John Hawe, the grandfather, by his will directed the grantees to stand seised of the premises to the use of himself and his wife "Johane" and John, their son; that John and Johane died and afterwards their son John died, whereupon the said lands and tenements fell to the defendant, his son. The defendant also says that his mother Elizabeth Hawe was seised of "walcroft" and as her son and heir he was then seised. (Early Chancery Proceedings, vol. 1, Bundle 561, No. 79). In the suit of John Hawe of Walsall against Richard Averrey and Richard, Robert and John Wilkys the plaintiff alleges ownership of lands in Solihull and Walsall in the counties of Warwick and Stafford and demands the deeds, but the papers are badly mutilated. (Early Chancery Proceedings, vol. 1, Bundle 415, No. 43, 1515-1518.) According to 4 Foss's "Judges of England," 482, Thomas Hutton was a Master in Chancery in 1483-4. He does not appear as Justice of the Common Pleas.

31, 1611, aged 80 years.<sup>f</sup> The entry in the parish records is: "The XXX jth daie of October, Mr. William Hawes, gent, de Hill Fieldes." She was buried Oct. 26, 1615, aged 70 years. The entry in the parish records is: "The six and twentie daie of October, Mrs. Ursula Hawes, Shellie." He is named and his arms are given in a catalogue of residents of Warwickshire made in 1577-8 by Henry Ferrers.<sup>g</sup> At an uncertain date, he was one of those who certified to the list of those who had given to the Howman Charitable Fund.<sup>h</sup> He left a will dated April 1, 1609,<sup>i</sup> and a codicil dated Aug. 29, 1611, which were proved at Lichfield Jan. 14, 1611-12. Only an unsigned copy is on file, the original having been kept by the executrix. The inventory of his personal estate amounted to £378 11s. 10d., and included among other articles "certeine books," "certeine mapps," a virginal, chessboard and clock. His will was written with his own hand. It directed that his body should be buried in the parish church of Solihull in that chapel where his father, one of his sons and one of his son's children were already buried, and that upon the day of his burial his executrix should pay to the church wardens five marks<sup>j</sup> "to be distributed by them amongst the poorest inhabitants within the seid parish of Solihull." He recites in his will that he had assured his real estate to his son Edmond Hawes, reserving only to himself an estate for life and his wife's jointure or dower in part thereof during her life, but he directs (and trusts that his son will agree to it) that his wife, Ursula, so long as she remains his widow, shall continue to dwell in his mansion house called Hillfield Hall, with the use of certain rooms, household implements and adjacent grounds.<sup>k</sup> As to his goods and chattels, he gives to his youngest daughter Constance £300, to be paid £100 upon her marriage or reaching the age of 24 years, and the whole sum apparently within

<sup>f</sup>The Visitation of Warwickshire in 1619 states erroneously that he was then alive. Dugdale corrects this statement at folio 38 of Rawlinson MS D 806 in the Bodleian Library, Oxford.

<sup>g</sup>8 Col. Top. & Geneal., 305.

<sup>h</sup>Pemberton, 200, 205.

<sup>i</sup>It was apparently written then, but, from the final clause, appears not to have been signed and sealed till Sept. 15, 1611.

<sup>j</sup>The mark was reckoned at 13s. 4d.

<sup>k</sup>She apparently preferred to live in his other house called Shelly, where she died.

three years after his decease. He recites that his son Edmond had received £150 of the amount, which he had secured to his sister by an obligation dated Jan. 12, 1604-5, and that he had agreed to pay her a further sum of £50 upon her marriage or reaching the age of 24 years. In consideration of this action on Edmond's part, and for other considerations, the testator agreed to leave him standing timber and other trees to the value of £200 which he might have cut down, and for the same considerations he bequeathed to him divers household goods and other articles named, including his books and maps, and "the boxes evidences & papers now in my Studie & gallerie or els where (except all such english books as my wief shall like best to have for her owne use)." He provided that if the articles so bequeathed to Edmond did not amount in value to £60, then his wife was to supply the lacking amount in bedding, household stuff, &c. If he failed to pay without suit the sums so due to his sister Constance, and to discharge all bonds, bills and obligations by which the testator stood bound jointly and severally with his son Edmond to divers persons in divers sums, then the gift to him of the said articles was to be void. To each of his daughters Elizabeth and Ursula, he directed his executrix to give some parcel of linen, household stuff or money as witness of his remembrance of them. (He evidently had endowed them upon their marriage.) He appears also to have given a remembrance to each of their children and of his son's children, not naming them. The residue of his goods and chattels, after payment of his debts and legacies, he bequeathed to his wife, whom he made his sole executrix. He requested his "wel beloved cosins & approved good freinds" Mr. Reginald Brome,<sup>1</sup> Mr. Michael Colles (his brother-in-law), the latter's son Humphrey Colles (his nephew) and Mr. William Sheldon (his son-in-law) to act as overseers of his will "& to be freindlie meanes to see the same quietlie and faithfullie executed & performed according to my true intent & meaning." To each of his overseers, for a kind remembrance, he gave 10 shillings in gold or gold rings to that value. The witnesses were Thomas Brockhurst, Richard Blunt, John Miles and Henry Newey. The last three made their marks, and

<sup>1</sup>First cousin of Wm. Hawes, being son of Rauff Brome and grandson of Nicholas Brome (3 Dugdale, 971; 12 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 98).

were quite likely servants of the testator. The codicil gave five pounds to William Hawes, Edmond's son, and to Jane, Edmond's daughter, the best of his yearling cow calves. To testator's daughter Constance, by the codicil, he gave a three-year-old heifer, and as to the £300 which his wife and son were to pay to the said Constance, he directed that the first payment should be made within six months after his death, the second a year later, and the third a year after that, his son paying 100 marks and his wife £33, 6s. 8d. on each occasion. He also directed that if Edmond should pay the said sums as directed in the codicil, Constance should take no advantage of the forfeiture of the bond mentioned in the will as given by him. His widow, Ursula, left a will dated March 25, 1614, with a memorandum dated October 2, 1615, which were proved and filed at Lichfield Nov. 3, 1615. The will was executed with a mark, but it does not follow that she could not write. The failure to sign it may have been due to bodily infirmity. It would not have been surprising if a lady at that time could not write, but it is reasonably certain that she could. The fact that her husband left his English books for her personal use shows that she could read. The fact that he specifies among his books those in English shows that he had others in some other tongue, no doubt Latin, with which he must have been familiar. Ursula Hawes in her will directs that her body be buried near that of her late husband. She gave 40 shillings to the poor of Solihull. She gave to Jane, daughter of her son Edmond, several articles of bedding and other household stuff, and directed that her son deliver to the said Jane a cow with her increase which her grandfather gave her. To her son Edmond's wife she gave "my damaske gowne and the two flaundere candlesticke that stand in the hall"; to her daughter Sheldon her wedding ring; to her daughter Hunt a little silver spoon; to William, her son Edmond's son, five pounds and his grandfather's seal ring; "to all the rest of my sonne Edmonds children tenn shillings a peese (excepting the sayd William & Jane Hawes)"; to her son Edmond's daughter Ursula Hawes 20 shillings and a pair of sheets; to her god-daughter, Jane Huggesford, 20 shillings and a pair of sheets; to her god-daughter, daughter of Mr. Noel, 20 shillings; to her brother, Mr. Michael Colles, three silver spoons; to her said brother's

wife, her silver pin; to her nephew, Mr. Humphrey Colles, 20 shillings, to her son Edmond she gave her English books, her wagons, plows and the rest of her iron stuff out of doors, and also a truckle bedstead, and the rest of her goods, chattels and household stuff she gave to her daughter Constance Hawes, whom she made her executrix. She appointed her son Sheldon and her son Edmond Hawes overseers, and to each she gave a silver goblet for his pains. The witnesses to the will were Humphrey Colles and Thomas Aylesbury. John Keeling witnessed the memorandum. The inventory of her personal estate amounted to £165, 2s. 8d., and included 37 books without giving their titles.

The seat of William Hawes was Hillfield Hall,  $\frac{3}{4}$  mile S. of Solihull church. It was sometimes called Highfield. A quarter of a mile S. of Hillfield Hall is a residence called "Libbard's House." This no doubt belonged to the family since "libbard" is an old form of leopard, and the Hawes arms carried three leopards' faces.  $\frac{3}{4}$  mile S. of Hillfield Hall is Shelly, a farmhouse which long was a part of the Hawes estate. Hillfield Hall was built<sup>m</sup> by William Hawes in 1576, two years after the death of his father. It had in all probability had a predecessor on lower ground, and the remains of a moat not far from Libbard's House seem to indicate the site. The back part was injured by a fire about 1867, and has been restored with some changes.<sup>n</sup> The front remains substantially in its original state. Over the front door is the following inscription, containing the initials of William Hawes and his wife Ursula, with a motto:

"H.  
W. V.  
1576.

*Hic hospites, in Coelo cives."*<sup>o</sup>

The writer visited this mansion in August, 1911. The earliest mention of the house found appears in a MS in the British Museum, written by the Rev. Thos. Ward of Leamington

<sup>m</sup>The house was clearly built and not merely rebuilt by him. No member of the family before him is described as of Hillfield Hall.

<sup>n</sup>Pemberton, 40.

<sup>o</sup>Here sojourners, in Heaven citizens. This might be used as a motto for the coat of arms.

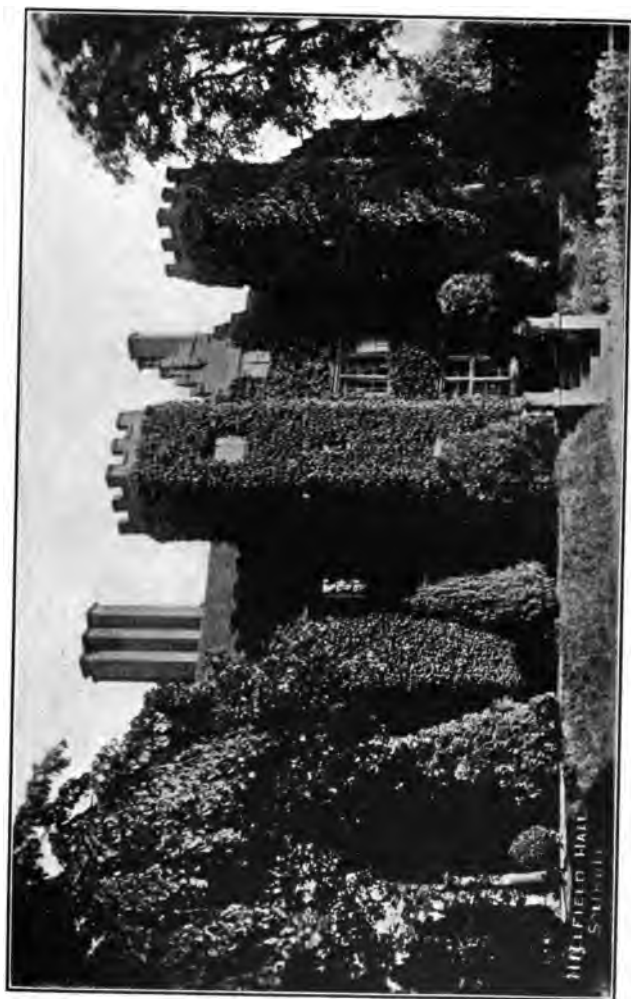


in 1830, or perhaps 1848.<sup>p</sup> "Hillfield Hall an ancient Mansion, having until of late years a considerable quantity of very curious stained glass, which was taken out by a Tenant: who glazed the windows<sup>q</sup> with plain glass: unknown to Mr. Lewis to whom the house & estate belong'd, who was much displeased at its removal. The farm belonging to this old House is 137 acres of arable & Pasture Land. It belong'd to Sir Ralph Bovey who was High Sheriff of this county in 1653 & was created a Bart in 1660 Aug. 30." Hannett in 1863 described the mansion, after referring to the architecture of the region: "The sixteenth century was a time of progression in England; more land was taken into cultivation, and the material prosperity of the people promoted. The greater security afforded by the laws rendered the defensive appliances of the moat and drawbridge no longer necessary, or such situations desirable. Many of the old halls were abandoned, and other buildings erected, in more beautiful and healthy situations. Hence, a new class of lords' or manor houses arose on hillsides or slopes."<sup>r</sup> In a note he adds: "Hillfield Hall, Solihull, a residence of the Hawes and Greswoldes, is a specimen of this class." "Hillfield Hall is an interesting relic of a mansion of the sixteenth century, to which reference has been already made in the introductory chapter. The engraving [appearing in the book] represents the oldest part of the structure, viz. the northern front, which, before its restoration by the present owner, T. E. Williams, Esq., was defaced by several unsightly lean-tos and obliterated windows. This part of the building is wholly of brick and of the castellated order, a style of edifice which did not go out of fashion for many years after such defenses were no longer required. This part presents two crenelated towers, with a gabled centre, and two wings right and left of the towers. The southern front is of later date, and is of the Italian order, with brick pillars having stone capitals [supposed to have been built by the Fieldings, owners in the Stuart times] \* \* \* When Belchier visited the neighborhood, he found here five

<sup>p</sup>Add. MS 29, 265, p. 118. The MS itself is dated 1830, but the catalogue of the Br. Museum gives the date 1848.

<sup>q</sup>It was no doubt in these stained glass windows that the coats of arms referred to by Belchier were found. (See p. 43½, *infra*.)

<sup>r</sup>Forest of Arden, 17. He gives illustrations of Solihull Church and Hillfield Hall (pp. 188, 189, 199).





coats of arms (most probably in the windows). \* \* \* \* \*

This last [William Hawes] appears to have rebuilt, or enlarged the house, as may be inferred from the following inscription over the doorway of the eastern tower. \* \* \* \* \*

The interior has undergone considerable alterations. The spacious old hall has been converted into rooms more suitable to the requirements of modern times. A long chamber still remains at the top of the house, under which was formerly a corridor or passage running the whole length of the building. In the western tower is an ancient oak spiral staircase, winding round a straight oak extending from the basement to the summit. Hillfield, according to family documents was first purchased 5th Edward II,<sup>a</sup> (1465,) by Thomas Hawes of Shirley, 'skilled in the law.' But the first member of the family resident at the place, as appears by the pedigree, was William Hawes, of 'Hilfield in Solihull, living in 1563.' His father was Thomas Hawes of Edlicott, a descendant in the fourth generation, of the same name and of the same place, one of whom, as above stated, married a daughter of John Greswolde. William Hawes, who lies buried in Solihull Church, was a benefactor of the Chantry of St. Alphege there.<sup>b</sup> He was succeeded by his son Edward,<sup>c</sup> living in 1619, whose posterity at that time included William, his son and heir, aged 14, three other sons, and eight daughters. This Edward<sup>d</sup> Hawes purchased the Manor of Solihull, 2nd James I, but afterwards sold it to Samuel Marrow, Esq., of Berkswell. Since then Hillfield has come to the Greswoldes<sup>e</sup> In 1878 W. Nivens describes the mansion and gives an etching.<sup>f</sup> "Hillfield. Within a mile to the south of the village of Solihull is a picturesque

<sup>a</sup>An error for Edward IV. By reason of this error Pemberton (pp. 38 and 43) erroneously gives the date A.D. 1311.

<sup>b</sup>Erroneous. It was a much earlier William. *Supra*, p. 12.

<sup>c</sup>Should be Edmond. The same correction should be made at p. 187.

<sup>d</sup>Forest of Arden, 198-200. In speaking of Belchier, Hannett refers in his notes to the Bridges papers in the Bodleian Library, Oxford. He incorrectly states that they are partly undecipherable and gives an imperfect and incorrect copy of them. A correct copy appears *infra*, p. 43½. Hannett states that the family of Hawes was in his time represented by the Hon. Swynfen Parker-Jervis, of Little Aston, Co. Stafford. He was not a representative of the Hillfield Haweses, but a descendent of the Walsall family.

<sup>e</sup>Illustrations of Old Warwickshire Houses, p. 6.

and interesting house of the Elizabethan period. The principal front, which is shown in the etching, is broken by two embattled hexagonal towers, in one of which is placed the entrance doorway, between them a small stepped gable, all of brick. The gables at each end of the front are ornamented in the same way. The part seen to the left has been a good deal modernized. The southern front is of a later date—more Italian in style, with brick pilasters, having stone capitals. Over a bay window which lights the dining-room is the shield of the Fielding family, who were living here in the time of the Stuarts, displayed by a spread eagle within a garter, inscribed with the words 'Mon espoir est en Dieu.' A stone panel over the entrance doorway in the eastern tower bears the following inscription, 'Hic hospites: in Coelo Cives,' the initials W H V (William and Ursula Hawes) and the date, 1576. The interior has been a good deal altered in adapting it to the requirements of modern times. In the western tower is an old spiral staircase of oak, winding round a central shaft, extending from the basement to the summit." He then copies Hannett as to the purchase and erection of the house. Pemberton,<sup>7</sup> in 1905, says: "At the beginning of the last century Hillfield was merely a farm house, but after a serious fire (c. 1867) had destroyed a considerable portion of the back part, it was restored to its former dignity, and is now one of the finest houses in the neighborhood." He gives an illustration of the mansion. The S. part of Hillfield Hall was rebuilt by the Fieldings prior to or about 1670 on a design supposed to be that of Inigo Jones.<sup>8</sup> At present F. W. Greswolde-Williams, Esq., of Bredenbury Court, Bromyard, Worcestershire, is the owner, while the occupant under a long lease is Samuel Boddington, Esq., a Birmingham merchant. Hannett (p. 198), from the circumstance of the armorial bearings of the Greswold family being carried on the stables, thinks it more than probable that some branch of that family had once resided at Hillfield Hall. This may be due merely to the marriage of Thomas Hawes with Ann Greswold, or it may be that he ob-

<sup>7</sup>Solihull and its Church, 40.

<sup>8</sup>Id. 39.

tained the estate by that marriage and not by purchase. Later, a family of Greswoldes owned Hillfield. The respond piers at the east end of the nave of the church are pierced by small windows, the northern of which is filled with stained glass taken from a window in Hillfield Hall, which contained the arms of the Aston (intermarried with Greswold), Fielding and Greswold families.<sup>a</sup> "On the respond pier [in the Becket Chapel] is an interesting tablet containing the figures of William Hawes (the builder of Hillfield Hall) and Ursula (Colles) his wife, together with those of their four sons and four daughters, all kneeling on either side of what looks like a marble tomb, on which rests an open book. Above them is a circle enclosing the words, 'Jehovah God.'" Below is this inscription:<sup>b</sup>

"1610.  
Will'm Hawes.  
aetatis 80.

1610.<sup>c</sup>  
Ursula Colles.  
aetatis 70.

Here Willm Hawes & Ursula his wife.  
Ther bodies lie, ther soules wth Christ in life;  
Whose Holy Spirit did so direct ther wayes  
That in his feare they lived to aged dayes.  
In endless joye they now wth Christ remaine,  
By Whose Blood all salvation doe obtaine."

"Beneath the tablet, on a roughly painted board, is a curious Latin acrostic and an English epitaph," preceded by a Latin inscription:<sup>d</sup>

"In obitum egregii et generosi viri magistri Gulielmi Hawes epitaphum piaae memoriae ergo editum obiit XXIX<sup>o</sup> die Octobris 1611."<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup>Id., 39, 96.

<sup>b</sup>Pemberton, 95, 164, gives the age of Ursula erroneously as 76. 2 Dugdale (p. 947) gives the inscription with some errors. Hamper gives it correctly. The tablet was repaired at the expense of the church wardens in 1667. (Pemberton, 95 n. 3.) The writer visited the church in August, 1911.

<sup>c</sup>Pemberton, 95, 164-166.

<sup>d</sup>This may be rendered in English thus: An epitaph to the pious memory of the distinguished gentleman Mr. William Hawes, who died Oct. 29, 1611.

- G. Gaudia maerorem superent, revirescere rursus
- U. Vera solet pietas, etiam post fata superstes.
- L. Lugendum fateor, quia saeva est morte peremptus
- I. Insignis verae fidei, et pietatis amator,
- E. Egregius Christi miles, virtutibus amplus.
- L. Laetandum tamen est potius, quia sidera scandit
- M. Mortem conculcans, Christo duce et auspice Christo,
- U. Vivit in aeternum, pretiosaque balsama secum
- S. Scilicet, aeternae fert haustus pramia vitae.
  
- H. Huius quam sincera fuit devotio, quantum
- A. Alma fides, seu fax duxit, religio quanta,
- V. Vita fuit testis, conctisque imitanda reliquit,
- V. Ut mortis, sic sancta piae vestigia vitae.
- E. Estne aliquid majus tibi quod dare numina possent,
- S. Sic justus vitam positus sic morte beata."

"If death coulde answere them that passe  
 Who lieth heere, or what he was,  
 Then he that lieth here within  
 Woulde answere make and thus begin:  
 William Hawes men caulde my name  
 (As you, weere once) now nothings am;  
 And you likewise in tyme shall be  
 Even duste, as I am now you see.  
 But he that did ingrave, above,  
 These lines as token of his love,  
 Can justly say that heere doth lye  
 Virtue, Fayth and Honestye,  
 Truth, Godlynes, a trustye friende  
 Just and Faythfull to the ende.  
 He was of sounde religion,  
 In God he put his trust alone,  
 On whom his surest trust relyde,  
 Whose servant he both liv'de and dy'de.  
 What goodnes els you well can crave  
 Is heere inclosed in this grave.  
 What foe can say he did him wronge;  
 What friend but founde his friendshippe strong;  
 What's he that knewe him and did heare  
 Of this his death, but shed a teare?

But teares alas! cannot obtayne  
 His life, whom fatall death hath slayne.  
 Though dead, he lives with God on high;  
 (Good reader) then, prepare to dye;  
 In death the way of all fleshe is,  
 And all by death muste passe to bliss."

Pemberton (p. 165) gives the following free translation<sup>e</sup> of the Latin acrostic, the first letters of whose lines spell (in Latin form) the name William Hawes:

- "W. With thoughts of joy dispel your grief. Though dead  
 the body lies  
 I. Immortal still the soul lives on; true virtue never dies.  
 L. Lament I must; for he in whom the Faith a champion had  
 L. Lies prone in death, Christ's soldier true, in virtue's armor clad.  
 I. I yet rejoice; for, by Christ's strength and life, on death  
 he treads  
 A. And mounts to higher spheres where life Divine its fragrance sheds  
 M. Man to reward, when he has kept the faith and fought the fight.  
 H. His life bears witness how sincere his love, his faith how bright  
 A. And strong, what ties did bind him to his God; a pattern sure  
 W. Which shows how man may live, and die, and live for evermore.  
 E. Eternal God can grant to thee no higher gift than this,  
 S. So to employ thy life that thou mayst pass by death to bliss."

---

<sup>e</sup>A prose translation, more literal, is the following: Let joy overcome grief. True piety is wont to revive again, survivor even of death. I confess that we ought to mourn, because a man distinguished for true faith, a lover of piety, a renowned soldier of Christ, of many virtues, has been carried away by cruel death. Yet we ought rather to rejoice because he ascends to the stars, treading down death, under the leadership and auspices of Christ; he lives forever, and having drunk the precious balsam, he carries with him the reward of eternal life. His life was witness how sincere was his devotion, to what extent his benign faith, like a torch, led the way, how great was his religion, and he has left, to be imitated by all, the sacred example as well of his death as of his pious life. Is there anything greater that the deity can give you than to lay down so just a life in so happy a death?



*Children,<sup>1</sup> in order given in the Visitation of Warwickshire:*

THOMAS, son and heir; died without issue before his father.

WILLIAM, 2nd son; died without issue before his father.

9 EDMOND, third son and heir.

URSULA; died young, before her father.

ELIZABETH; married Oct. 16, 1588, William Sheldon,<sup>9</sup> of Bromsgrove, County Worcester, and had issue.

URSULA, m. Nov. 8, 1595, Raphael Hunt,<sup>h</sup> of Stoke Green, Parish of Hambury, Co. Worcester, and had issue.

CONSTANCE; m. between 1615 and 1619, George Dalby<sup>4</sup> of Milcombe, Parish of Bloxham, Co. Oxford.

THOMAS, 4th son; died without issue before his father.

<sup>1</sup>In Dugdale's 2nd edition (index) under Dabridge-Court, it is stated that William Hawes of Langdon Hall (ob. 1610) m. Ursula, d. of — Coles, and had Alice, who m. Henry Bromley. It will appear from the text that this is entirely erroneous. The Visitation of Warwickshire (Harl. Soc. Pubs., vol. 12, p. 61) states, no doubt correctly, that Henry Bromley married Alice, daughter of — Hawes, and that his ancestor married the daughter and heiress of William Hawes, who was perhaps the William of 1327 (*supra*, p. 10). Henry Bromley's daughter Margaret, it is stated in the Visitation, married John Greswold of Solihull, who according to Pemberton (p. 42) flourished about 1480.

<sup>9</sup>In the parish record of the marriage they are styled "Mr. William Sheldon and Mrs. Elizabeth Hawes." "Mr. William Sheldon, son of Mr. William Sheldon of Bromsgrove" was baptized in Solihull Apr. 20, 1596.

<sup>h</sup>They had a daughter Ursula, baptized at Solihull Aug. 28, 1597, who married Richard Kenwick, son of Robert, of King's Sutton, Northamptonshire. (The Genealogist, N. S., vol. 24, p. 103.) In the parish record of the marriage they are styled "Mr. Raphael Hunte and Mrs. Ursula Hawes." See also 1 Baker's Northamptonshire, 694.

<sup>4</sup>The printed Visitation of Warwickshire gives the name erroneously as Bally (12 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 405). On a survey of Solihull in 1629, the jury reported that "George Dalby gent. and Constance his wife, or one of them: holdeth of the Lord, by lease five parcels of land by estimation one acre and a half or thereabouts; by the yerelie rent of 4s. but how many yerres are yet unexpired: they doe not knowe." (Add: MS in Br. Museum 17, 700; Pemberton, 51). Another MS places this land in the Borough of Solihull, gives the half yearly chief rent at 2s. 4½d., and states that the lease had in 1629 14 or 15 years to run. (MS 27, 973, fol. 99.) At a later date, probably 1638, it appears that this land was then in the occupation of John Fifield; rent 2s. 10d. (MS 27, 973, fol. 55.) Mr. Dalby's land in the Borough paying one penny rent half yearly is referred to, probably under date of 1629 (Id. fol. 118b). In 1645 there was due from "the executors of George Dalby, gent. & Constance his wife" 2s. 10½d. as a half year's rent for five parcels of land in the Borough, estimated to contain an acre and a half or above, in the occupation of John Fifield, the lease having about 9 or 10 years to run (Id. fol. 124b). It thus appears that Mr. Dalby had died before Sept. 29, 1645. Whether his wife was still living is uncertain.

9 EDMOND HAWES, married,<sup>1</sup> before 1600, Jane, daughter of Richard Porter of Bayham, Sussex. In 1605 Edmond Hawes became one of the lords of the manor of Solihull in conjunction with his cousin Humphrey Colles,<sup>2</sup> by "an indenture made the 16th day of May, 2 James I, between Thomas Throckmorton of Coughton, Co. Warwick, esquire, and Margaret his wife, of the one part, & Edmond Hawes of Sollyhull in the said county, gent., & Humfrey Colles of the Middle Temple London, gent., of the other part," by which Throckmorton and wife, in consideration of £1080, sold "to Edmond Hawes & Humfrey Colles all that Manor or Lordship of Sollyhull with all lands, woods, courts, leetes, views of franck pledge, wards, marriages, releifes, rents, escheats, herriotts, fines & amercements etc. And also the advowson of Sollyhull & of anie free Chappell or Chauntery appendant & belonging to the said Manor."<sup>3</sup> Humphrey Colles and Edmond Hawes gave a lease of an acre of land in the Borough to William Holberg, dated March 4, 1607-8, for the term of 2000 years, at the yearly rent of one pepper corn.<sup>4</sup> They had given a lease dated Dec. 20, 1605, to William Hawes for 44 years, at the yearly rent of one half penny, of "certeyn parcel, parcels or pools taken out of the wast behind his dwelling house."<sup>5</sup> The yearly value of the chief rents due the lord of the manor (probably in 1638) was for the borough three pounds four shillings seven and a half pence, and for the other parts, called the "foreign," eighteen pounds two shillings six and a half pence; total £21, 7s. 2d.<sup>6</sup> Hawes and Colles sold the manor and advowson by deed dated March 13, 1607, to Samuel Marrow, for £1020.<sup>7</sup> The difference of £60 between the buying and selling

<sup>1</sup>Visit. of Warwickshire, *infra*, p. 46; Berry's Kent Pedigrees, 321; Sussex & Kent Visits.

<sup>2</sup>His will, dated Feb. 9 and March 18, 1639-40, was proved in P. C. C. June 11, 1640 (94 Coventry).

<sup>3</sup>Close Rolls in Public Record Office, 2 James I, pt. 20; 2 Dugdale, p. 943; Hannett, p. 200, erroneously giving Edward Hawes as the name of the purchaser.

<sup>4</sup>MS 27, 972 in Br. Museum, fol. 23b.

<sup>5</sup>Br. Mus. MS 27, 972, fol. 23b.

<sup>6</sup>Id. fol. 96.

<sup>7</sup>Hamper on Dugdale, where it is also stated that Marrow sold May 8, 1608, to Sir Richard Greves, and the latter Aug. 20, 1638, to Sir Simon Archer for £1120. In 1631 Greves had confirmation of the market and fair at Solihull (2 Dugdale, 943 n. c.).

price may perhaps be accounted for by the sums which Hawes and Colles probably received for the two leases mentioned above and perhaps others made by them. In 1607 and 1616 Edmond Hawes was "Collector," or Parish Bailiff, an officer elected annually from among the feoffees.<sup>q</sup> The duty of the parish bailiff "was to collect the rents accruing from the parish property and trusts, and generally to control all the finances."<sup>r</sup> In or about 1566 the chantries and chapels were dissolved and "the funds which had been devoted to their maintenance were vested in a body of ten Feoffees [later called trustees], who, with the Parish Bailiff at their head, became from that time forward a kind of local Parliament." "The Parish Bailiff was elected annually from among the Feoffees" in rotation.<sup>s</sup> In 1627 from Edmond Hawes, gent., to the lord of the manor of Solihull, 13d. was a half year's rent of a house and garden in the borough, 13 shillings 6½d. a half year's rent "for lands called Shelley," 5 shillings and 3d. "for lands called Pratt's Farme," and one shilling "for a fish poole upon ye lords wast."<sup>t</sup> A presentation relating to the manor of Solihull, made April 14, 1630, by a jury presided over by Thomas Holbecke, of Meriden Hall, Co. Warwick, gent., reported as follows: "Edmond Hawes gent. holdeth of the Lorde one house one backside, which parte of the backside is called the Maiors garden; but whose Land the Maiors garden is they knowe not; by the yerelie rent of 2s. 2d."<sup>u</sup> He was not without activity in the courts. On the last of November 1624, he filed a bill in Chancery against William Hopkins, in which he is styled gentleman, alleging that he became bound with Richard Baldwin to Sampson Hopkins in the penal sum of £410 for the payment of 200 pounds or thereabout and interest; that after many delays Hopkins put the bond in suit and Baldwin answered without notice to Hawes. Judgment passed for £405, Hopkins died and his executor, William Hopkins, took out writ to enforce the judgment against Hawes, who was then detained in the common jail at Warwick until he should pay the £405. He was only a surety and had no part in the orig-

<sup>q</sup>Pemberton, 141.

<sup>r</sup>Id. 30.

<sup>s</sup>Id., 29, 30, 149, 146 n. 3.

<sup>t</sup>Br. Mus. Add. MS 27, 972, fols. 76, 78b.

<sup>u</sup>Pemberton, 50, 51; Br. Mus. Add. Roll, 17, 770.

inal loan; he had often entreated Hopkins to recover his debt when Baldwin could have paid, but he gave further time. Hawes states that he cannot pay, and asks consideration and that Hopkins may be summoned before the court to answer the truth of his allegations and to receive such orders as the court may deem just.<sup>o</sup> On Nov. 27, 1626, he filed a bill in Chancery against Andrew Archer, alleging that about Feb., 1613-14, and later, William Brome<sup>o</sup> of Woodlow in Warwickshire borrowed sums of money, including £40 from Andrew Archer, for which Brome and Hawes as his surety became bound in the penalty of £80 for the payment of said £40 on the 14th of the next May. In June, 1614, and at other times Brome and Hawes borrowed £80 more from said Archer and became bound for £240, conditioned for the payment of £120 on Sept. 6, 1614. About April, 1616, Brome and Hawes and another as his sureties, for so much of said £120 as remained unpaid and for such money as they borrowed, became bound to Archer in the sum of £200, conditioned for the payment of £100 on Oct. 22, 1616. About August, 1617, Brome and Hawes as his surety became bound to Archer in the sum of £100, conditioned for the payment of £50 on Feb. 13, 1617-18. About May, 1619, Brome and Hawes and another surety renewed the above bond, conditioned that the £50 should be paid on Aug. 11, 1619. The three last mentioned bonds were subsequently sued, the debt then paid and the bonds delivered up. The two former bonds were forgotten and not demanded, being included in the last, or had been previously paid. The bill alleges that Archer has lately put these two bonds in suit against Hawes, Brome being dead, and demands that Archer be summoned before the court and compelled to state what sums he has lent, what received in discharge, etc.<sup>o</sup> On the same 27th of November Hawes filed a bill in Chancery against John Mayne of Elmdon, Warwickshire, alleging that in 1619 Mayne, being greatly indebted to divers persons, he became surety for him upon his faithful agreement to make over to him some good estate of lands and tenements in Elmdon to save him

<sup>o</sup>Chancery Proceeds., Series II, Charles I, Bundle 358, No. 41.

<sup>o</sup>In the Chancery Proceedings the name is erroneously written Brown.

<sup>o</sup>Chancery Proceeds., Charles I, H. 75, No. 14, in Public Record Office, London.

harmless. On June 24, 1613, Mayne had given a written lease for 500 years of the manor of Elmdon and all its appurtenances to Humphrey Colles and John Hercy, and on June 18, 1614, they had sold the lease to James Mayne and Simon Mayne, brothers of John. Simon Mayne had died not long after. On Oct. 9, 1619, James Mayne with the consent of John Mayne had sold his rights to Hawes to be used or sold towards the payment of John Mayne's debts. On April 26, 1626, the latter signed a writing declaring the debts to be his own proper debts and agreeing to continue the lease of Elmdon to Hawes for their payment. The bill continues that about four years last past John Mayne possessed himself of the original lease for 500 years, that he has now entered into possession of the manor and taken the rents, etc., to his own use to the yearly value of £400, will not pay his debts, has permitted Hawes to be arrested on the bonds, will not appear and defend the suits, nor will he surrender the lease nor pay Hawes the rents. Relief is prayed that Mayne be forced to give an account of his debts and to surrender the manor of Elmdon to Hawes and restore the rents, etc., due. The answer of Mayne, which is on file, admits that Hawes became his surety, but alleges that prior to that time he was indebted to Colles, Hercy and others. That the sale to Colles and Hercy was to be void on stated conditions, which were fulfilled. The demise to Hawes was in trust for the payment of Mayne's debts. On July 20, 1620, he subscribed a note detailing the debts for which Hawes stood surety. He alleges that many debts had since been paid by him (none by Hawes) and others incurred, that the latter refused to part with the manor or any portion of it, though sufficient was promised him to cover his risk, and that Mayne was hindered by Hawes in paying his debts." A further answer was filed in which Mayne asserts that the assignment to Hawes was made voluntarily, that there was no reason why he should be bound to it as he was surety for him in greater sums than Hawes was for him, and that he signed a note of his proper debts, but did not agree that the lease of Elmdon should continue with Hawes." Robert Baker of Bay-

<sup>1</sup>Chancery Proceeds., Series I, Charles I, H. 67, No. 56.

<sup>2</sup>Chancery Proceeds., Charles I, H. 65, No. 9.

ham, Sussex, gentleman, married Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Porter, and sister of Jane who married Edmond Hawes. His will dated May 20, 1604, mentions brother and sister Hawes. Edmond Hawes was one of the witnesses.<sup>a</sup> Robert's son, John Baker, described as of Rotherfield, Sussex, gentleman, by his will dated Oct. 16, 1623, and proved Feb. 16, 1624, gives to his uncle Hawes 20s. to buy a ring and to his aunt Hawes 40s.<sup>b</sup> The will of Edward Quimby (2nd husband of Richard Porter's widow) of Allington, Co. of Southampton, Esq., dated Feb. 3, 1612-13, and proved the last day of the following February, gives his son-in-law Edmund Hawes "a green Satten dublett with Jerkin & hose of Flanders seardge."<sup>c</sup> His widow, Jane Quimby, described as of Titchfield, made a will dated Aug. 6, 1618, and a codicil, describing herself as of Lamberhurst, dated June 25, 1621, which were proved June 17, 1624. In the will she leaves £20 to her daughter Jane Hawes, and in the codicil the same sum to her granddaughter Jane Hawes.<sup>d</sup> John Porter, Esq., of Lamberhurst, Kent, brother-in-law of Edmond Hawes, left a will dated Oct. 24, 1643, and proved Feb. 11, 1644-5.<sup>e</sup> It provides the following legacies: "I give unto my loving brother Edmond Hawes" £20; "to my nephew William Hawes," £20, "to my nephew John Hawes" £10, "to the daughters of my brother Hawes as followeth Unto Mary Hawes thirty poundes Unto Ursula Hawes twentie pounds and unto Ruth Hawes twenty pounds, all the legacies given unto my brother Hawes and his children to be paid soe soone as conveniently may be after the legacies given unto my children." To the will is added the following: "Memorandum that my intent is that the aforesaid legacy of twenty pounds given to my brother Edmond Hawes shall be void unless he procure a discharge from his children to my Executors for twenty pounds which I have paid him for his children in the presence of John Porter and William Chanon." The witnesses to the

<sup>a</sup>2 Waters, 1345-6; P. C. C. Harte, 61.

<sup>b</sup>Id., 1346-7; P. C. C. Clarke, 12.

<sup>c</sup>Id., 1436; P. C. C. Lawe, 18.

<sup>d</sup>Id.; P. C. C. Bryde, 115.

<sup>e</sup>P. C. C., Rivers, 41.

will were John Porter, Thomas Baker, William Chanon and Henry Porter. From this will it may be inferred that Edmond Hawes was in 1648 living at or near Lamberhurst and that his wife, Jane, was then dead. Indeed she may have died between Aug. 6, 1618, when her mother, Jane Quimby, provided for her in her will a legacy of £20, and June 25, 1621, when in her codicil Jane Quimby provided a legacy of the same amount for her granddaughter Jane Hawes. It is clear that Edmond Hawes had removed from Solihull by about 1647, and that he had parted with Hillfield Hall, and probably his other lands, not later than 1653.<sup>f</sup> Pemberton (p. 39) says he was living in 1653, but gives no authority.<sup>ff</sup> Hamper gives the following from Dugdale's MS notes: "Hawes. This familye is now extinct, or gone from Solihull of late time; but from 32<sup>o</sup> E. 3 [1358-9] I finde that they have had a being here, and that of them John Hawe was a commissioner for collecting a Subsidye in this county in 6<sup>o</sup> H. 4 [1404-5]. Their Armes is Sable a chevron Argent betwixt 3 Leopards heads or."<sup>g</sup> Hamper subjoins: "Sir Simon Archer adds—'Mr. Ralf Bovy the now High Sheriff is now owner of Mr. Hawes his lands.'"<sup>h</sup>

*Children, in the order given in the Visitation of  
Warwickshire, but not in all cases in the order  
of birth:*

WILLIAM, son and heir, 14 years old in 1619, baptized  
Dec. 30, 1604.

JOHN, second son, baptized Apr. 23, 1611.

---

<sup>f</sup>It appears that Sir Ralph Bovy had possessed Hillfield Hall before 1669, from Pemberton, p. 40, n. 1. From Roll 194/314 (Subsidy, Co. Warwick, Hundred of Hemblingforde) in the Public Record Office, London, it appears that Bovy and Hawes were jointly interested in lands in Solihull in 1627 and 1628. They were assessed £3 12 shillings for the fourth of five entire subsidies in lands granted in 3 and 4 Charles I.

<sup>ff</sup>It is possible the authority was the will of John Porter and that 1653 is a misprint for 1643.

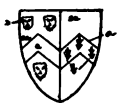
<sup>g</sup>Hamper states that Dugdale's notes relative to the monuments, etc., in Solihull Church were made Apr. 17, 1647, and it is likely that the observation about the Hawes family was made at or about the same time. Pemberton (p. 99 n. 3) says Dugdale visited the parish for information in 1640.

<sup>h</sup>Ralph Bovy, Esq., was High Sheriff of Warwickshire in 1653 (3 Dugdale, 1152; *supra*, p. 30).

[ms. Top. Northants. c. 1. Bodleian Library.]

[Pencil note, in a modern hand, on a fly-leaf of this ms: "Copy of the Northampton part (not all) of this book in Bridges' Collection, vol. xiiij N. (now ms. Top. Northants c. 13), by Belcher of Gidsbore."]

(f. 166<sup>b</sup>) Com. Warric. Solihull. Ecclesia parochialis  
fenestris.



Thomas Haw alias Hawes:  
Elizabeth one of the daughters of Nicholas Bromby, m<sup>re</sup>,  
esquire.

(f. 167<sup>b</sup>) Solihull adhuc. In Edithus Hawes.



John Hawe  
of Shelley in  
the parish of  
Shelley 1371.



Thomas Hawe  
of High fields  
in the parish of  
Solihull married  
Ann daughter  
of John Greenoble  
1465.

*a*  
Should be  
Solihull.

*d*  
Should be  
known. These  
three words are  
in a later hand.

*b*  
Probably  
killed by  
arrow.  
(Bridges'  
Herald  
Arms  
467) See  
also mss.  
p. 23.



Thomas married Elizabeth daughter of  
Nicholas Bromby 1527.



Edward Hawes married.



William Hawes  
son of Thomas  
and Elizabeth  
married Viola daughter  
of William Cotes  
of Leeghe Com. Wigor.  
1562.

*c*  
In Warric.  
cent.





10 EDMOND (the emigrant), third son, baptized Oct. 15, 1612.

JANE, baptized Oct. 5, 1600.

LUCY, baptized Jan. 12, 1602/3.

URSULA, baptized Jan. 19, 1601/2; buried Apr. 16, 1602.<sup>4</sup>

MARY, baptized Oct. 25, 1607; unmarried in 1643.

ANN, baptized Sept. 5, 1609.

ELIZABETH, baptized Aug. 18, 1616.

RUTH, baptized June 18 (or 28), 1618; unmarried in 1643.

URSULA, baptized Oct. 26, 1606; unmarried in 1643.

THOMAS, died without issue.

In the parish record of baptisms these are described as Mr. or Mrs., as the case may be, and as son or daughter of Mr. Edmond Hawes, Shelly being given as his residence in 1607, 1609 and 1611, and Hillfield at the other dates. It is probable that William Hawes, the eldest son of Edmond, became a resident of London and that he is the William Hawes, gent., of St. Dunstan in the West, whose will dated Sept. 11, 1652, was proved June 8, 1653.<sup>4</sup> He left his brother Mr. Edmond Hawes £40, his three sisters, Mrs. Mary Best, Mrs. Elizabeth Nicholas, and Mrs. Ruth Hawes, £20 each, his sister-in-law, Mrs. Damaris Hawes, £6 to buy a piece of plate, the three children of his brother Mr. John Hawes and Mrs. Damaris Hawes, viz., John £20, Damaris £10 and Thomas £10. He gave to his brother-in-law Mr. Prosper Nicholas £10, to his brother-in-law Mr. John Best<sup>5</sup> £5, to his laundress £5, and the residue of his estate to his brother Mr. John Hawes, whom he made his executor. Feb. 8, 1664/5, letters of administration on the estate of Ursula Hawes, late of the parish of St. Mary Aldermanbury, London, were granted to her brother John Hawes.<sup>6</sup> She perhaps was the daughter of Edmond Hawes. The Visita-

<sup>4</sup>P. C. C., Brent 160. Besides the identity of names is the fact that he calls himself, "gent," and his brothers and sisters, "Mr." and "Mrs."

<sup>5</sup>At the end of Roll 259/9 (Lay Subsidy Rolls, Warwickshire, 18 Charles II) in the Public Record Office, London, appears a note that John Best, gent., of London, took oath on Lady Day, 1666, that he had returned a true account of the hearths and stoves in Warwickshire for the duty due the King.

<sup>6</sup>Commissary of London, 139.

tion of Sussex (p. 196) states (probably in 1633/4) that John Elffred of Hoo married —, daughter of — Haws of Warwickshire. This may mean our Edmond Hawes.<sup>1</sup>

#### ABSTRACT OF WILL OF RAUFFE BROME AT PROBATE REGISTRY, WORCESTER

*Will of Rauffe Brome of Wodlowe in the County of Warwick Esquire—Dated 18th March 1567—To be buried in the Parish Church of St. Nicholas in Warwick near unto his Mothers Grave or where his Executors should consider most convenient—Gives to the Church wardens of St. Nicholas aforesaid thirteen shillings and four pence—To the poor people there Forty shillings in Bread or otherwise as his Executors think good—To the Churchwardens of the High Church of Warwick six shillings and eight pence. To the Churchwardens Leake Wooten Six shillings and eight pence. To the Poor there Twenty shillings—Gives some land and tenements [name and description gone] to Son Thomas Brome—Third Son William Brome—Eldest Daughter Anne Brome—Second Daughter Gertrude Brome—Mentions third Daughter but name gone—Later on a Daughter Katheren is mentioned, Sister Joyes Brome—Brother in law Thomas Hawes of Solyhull—Margery Prince sometime his Servant—Residue of Estate to Regnolde Brome Son and Heir—Cousin Richard Aygelenbye—Makes Brother in law Ambrose Digbye Gentleman Cousin William (*sic*) Hawse Gentleman, Son Regnolde and Son Thomas Executors and Cousins Kenelme Digbye Esquire Anthony Digbye Gentleman and John Hunt Esquire Overseers.*

Signed—Rauf—The rest of signature has gone and the Witnesses' names have also gone.

Proved [Day of the month gone] May 1567.

#### COPY OF HERALD'S VISITATION OF WARWICKSHIRE IN 1563

THE descent of Thomas Hawes of Edlicot in the Countie of Warwicke and in the hundreth of Hymlinfforde.

THOMAS Hawes maryed — the daughter of — and had issu Thomas.

<sup>1</sup>53 Harl. Soc. Pubs., 196.

THOMAS Hawes married — the daughter of — and had  
issu

THOMAS Hawes sunn of Thomas married the daughter of —  
and had issu —

THOMAS Hawes sun of Thomas married Johanna daughter of  
Rensford and had issu

THOMAS Hawes of Edlicott in the countie of Warwick Lyveth  
in A° D<sup>i</sup> 1563 and married Elizabeth daughter of Nycholas  
Browne of Wodhosse in the said Countie of Warwicke and hath  
issu

WYLLM Hawes sunn and heir of Thomas and Elizabeth

CONSTANCE ffyrst daughtr of Thomas & sister of Wyllm was  
married to Thomas Speherd Yeman.

ELIZABETH 2 daughter of Thomas Hawes.

MARGARET 3 daughter of Thomas Hawes.

ARMS: *Sable*, a chevron *argent*, between 3 leopards faces or  
(no crest or motto given).

From G XI., folio 74, being Cook, Charter Herald's *Visita-  
tion of Warwick*, made in the year 1563, & copied by me.

EVERARD GREEN,  
*Rouge Dragon.*

Herald's College, London,  
31 July 1911.



Signature of Edmond Hawes to  
Pedigree, 1619.

COPY OF HERALD'S VISITATION  
OF WARWICKSHIRE  
IN 1619

Willus Hawes = Ursula filia  
de Hilfeild in Willi Colles  
parochia de Leigh in  
Solehull in Com. Wigorn.  
Warr area  
Superstes 1619

Thomas fil et heres ob. s. p.	Willmus filius 2 s. p.	Edmondus Hawes de Hilfeild in Solehull area fil 3 et heres Supstes 1619	= Jana filia Rici Porter de Bayham in Sussex	Ursula	Elizabetha uxor Willi Sheldon de Bromsgrave in Com. Wigorn	Ursula uxor Rapheelis Hunt de Stoke green in parochia Hambury in Com. Wigorn	Constancia ux Georgii Dalby de Milcombe in parochia de Bloxham in Com. oxon	Thomas fil. 4 s. p.
-------------------------------------	------------------------------	--	--	--------	--	---	---	---------------------------

Willus Hawes  
fil: et heres  
æt 14 annos  
1619

Johannes 2

Edmondus 3

Ursula

Maria

(Signed) Edmonde Hawes.

ARMS: *Sable*, a chevron *argent*  
between three leopards faces  
or  
(No crest or motto recorded)

from C. 7. folio 47<sup>b</sup>, being the Herald's Visitation of  
Warwickshire, made in the year 1619,  
& copied by me

Everard Green  
Rouge Dragon

Heralds' College, London,  
31 July, 1911.

as Armiger, that is, esquire.

COPY OF WILL OF THOMAS HAWES AT LICHFIELD  
PROBATE REGISTRY

In the name of god amen the xx<sup>th</sup> day of Maye in the yere of o<sup>r</sup> lorde god m<sup>l</sup>clxxiiij and in the xvj yere of the Reyne of o<sup>r</sup> Sov'ayne lady Elizabeth (by the grc of god) of Englande France & Irelande quene defender of the fayth &c I Thomas Hawe al Hawes of the pische of Solyhull in Countie of Warwycke gentylman (beyng wholl of body & of pfett memory thanks be to god) remembrynge the unstabilite & uncertentie of thys fraile and trancetorie worlde And most specially the afuall & sudayne death that dayly apperith and wylling therefore to ppare & make in redynesse myselfe as in that behalfe apprteyneth do make & ordeyne thys my p'sent last Wyll & testamt in mane<sup>r</sup> & forme folowying And first I utterly rennce & forsake thys trancetory worlde and all the veyne joyes & pleasures therin holly betakyng & comyttting my sole to allmyghty god my maker Savyor & redem<sup>r</sup> besechynge hys gre that I may be ptaker w<sup>th</sup> the elect of the fruicon of the incomperable yoie & felicitie as he hath p'pared for me & all mankynde And I beseche o<sup>r</sup> blesseyd lady Virgyn Mary the mother of o<sup>r</sup> Savyor Jhu Christ, and all the holy copny of hevyn to pray for me wretched synner And I wyll my symple carkes to be buried in the chappell of Saynt Clement w<sup>thyn</sup> the pishe churche of Solyhull aforesayd in suche order of funeralle as shalbe thought good by myne executors & ov'seers undernamed Furthermore where I have gevyn by my dede indentyd beryng date the                      day of                      in the xiiiij yere of the Reyne of o<sup>r</sup> sayd sov'aigne lady the quene to my welbeloved cosyn Thomas Greswolde gentylman to my trusty frends Thomas Waryng gentylman and Barnaby Holbache yoman all that my tenement or burgage w<sup>th</sup> the garden & orchard therto belongyng sett lyng & beyng in the myll lane w<sup>thyn</sup> the borowe of Solyhull aforesaid nowe in the tenewre & occupaion of Thomas Heyford And also one lytell croft of land lying to the barne yarde of Anne Pole Wydw on the south syde to the prsonage grounde on the north syde And to the lane ledyng from lewde heyth unto tenters grene on the west syde of the borowe of Solyhull aforesaid all whyche tenement & croft the sayd Thomas Heyford assign of John Blake-

nall gent hath a lease for t'me of yerys yet endewryng yeldg... & paying therfore yerely to me the said Thomas & to my hers xiiii<sup>s</sup> of lawfull money of Englonde to have & to holde all the said tenement or burgage & croft w<sup>th</sup> their apptenncs unto the said Thomas Gryswolde Thomas Waryng & Barnaby Holbache their heirs & assignes for ev<sup>r</sup> to these intents uses & condicones hereafter folowyng (that ys to wytt) that the said Thomas Gryswold Thomas Waryng & Barnaby Holbache & their heirs shall fromhensforth stonde & be seased of & in the said tenement & other the p'miss to theym & to their heirs for ev<sup>r</sup> yeldyng paying & distributyng yerely to the pore people inhabityng we<sup>th</sup>in the said pische of Solyhull for ev<sup>r</sup> all the yerely rent & rents yssues & pfetts growyng made & answeyrd for the said tenement garden orchard & croft w<sup>th</sup> their apptenncs (the cheif rent therof and xvj<sup>d</sup> yerely excepted & to be deducted the same payments & distribucon of all the same rents & pfetts (except before excepted) to be made dealt & gevyn amonge the said pore people by the said Thomas Gryswold Thomas Waryng & Barnaby Holbache their heirs or assignes yerely for ev<sup>r</sup> in & uppon that day twelmoneth that shall fortune my buryall to be the saide pore people beyng then psent in the said churche knelyng & saying the lords pyer for my sole my wyffs sole or my chyldern soles & all christen soles and that the said Thomas Gryswold Thomas Waryng & Barnaby Holbache & their heirs shall have yerely xij<sup>d</sup> pcell of the said xvj<sup>d</sup> (before excepted) for and towards their paynes viz each of theym iiij<sup>d</sup> to se the sa... my yerely almes gevyn & distributed in man<sup>r</sup> & forme above expressed and also that the psone of the sayd churche or hys deputy for the tyme beyng shall have yerely for ev<sup>r</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup> (residew of the said xvj<sup>d</sup>) to have my said symple almes to be remembred in the polpett in the sayd churche yerely for ev<sup>r</sup> on the Sunday next before my said *obsegnell* As in the said dede indented wherof one pt doeth remayne w<sup>th</sup> the said Thomas Gryswolde and the other pt remayneth w<sup>th</sup> more plainly doth appere trustyng that my said feoffers & their heirs wyll trewly execute the sayd dede accordyng to my trew meanyng thereof yf not (as god forbyde) then I wyll my executors & their assignes shall see the yssues & pfetts of the sayd tenement & land w<sup>th</sup> thapptenncs to be trewly distributed yerely for eve<sup>r</sup> in man<sup>r</sup>

& forme before specified &c And where by one inventore beryng date the first daye of September in the iiij<sup>th</sup> yere of the reyne of o<sup>r</sup> sayd sov'aigh lady the quene made betwene me the said Thomas Hawes on the one prtie and Margarett Colles wydowe and Edmund Colles Esquire her sonne on the other pte doth assuere that one howse lying in the borowe of Solyhull afforesaid & certen closes in the foren ther then in the tenewre of Rychard Weale one tenement one orchard one lytell crosse a wynde myll & a horse myll sett lying & beyng in the said piche of Solyhull then in the tenewre of Roger Smalwod And also three closes called Blakefylde brounde gowse croft & rownd aboute crofte lying in the said pishe of Solyhull now or late in the sev'all tenewrys & occupacon of me the said Thomas Hawes Thomas Jeckeson & Thomas Acton & John Johnson shalbe to such uses and intents as I the sayd Thomas Hawes shall appoynt & lymytt the same by my last wyll the remaynder thereof as in the same indenture more playnly may appere therfore I have gevyn & granted (by the assent of Wyllm Hawes my sonne & heir) to the sayd Thomas Jackeson & Elizabeth hys wyf my daughter the sayd howse & a lytell medowe & tew closes w<sup>th</sup> thapptennes somtyme in the tenewre of the seyd Richard Weale bothe by dede indentyd in tayle & by fyne late knowleged at the last aff accordyng to the sayd dede intayle the remaynder to my right heirs for ev<sup>r</sup> Also as for the distribucon & appoyntment of the rest of the said lands & tents (that ys to wytt) the sayd tenement orchard close wyndmyll horsemill & the three closes called blakfylde wrounde hole croft & rounde aboute croft for appeasyng resolucion & determinacon of some ambiguitie & dowte lately had betwene me my wyff & the said Wyllm Hawes cons'nyng the right & tytle of the joynter & dowre of my sayd wyff in all my lands & tents in the pishe of Solyhull afforesaid And for dyv's other matters I the sayd Thomas Hawes & my sayd wyff and my sayd Sonne Wyllm dyd submytt or selfs to stonde to & abyde the awarde order & jugement of the sayd Thomas Gryswold who by our mutuall assents dyd make and awarde indentyd beryng date the xvj day of December last past before the date hereof aswell suf'uyng one annuytie of fyve pounds to be payed by my sayd sonne Wyllm hys heys or executors to my sayd Wyff duryng her naturall lyff in reco-



pence of her joynter & dower of & in all my sayd lands & tents in Solyhull afforesayd do for the sune of xxx<sup>li</sup> to be payed by my sayd sonne Wyllm to my executors toward the pformance of thys my last Wyll & testament & for other maters in the sayd awarde conteyned and specified may playnly appere wherof one pt remayneth in the custody of the sayd Thomas Waryng to the use of my sayd wyfe yf yt fortune at any tyme hereafter that yf my sayd sonne Wyllm hys heirs or executors or any of theym do not stonde to p'forme fulfyll & kepe all & eny suche articles grunts & agrements of hys or their pt to be p'formed fulfylled & kept conteyned & specified in the sayd awarde (as god forbyde) that then I wyll my sayd wyff & her assignes shall have receyve & take yerely the yssues rents & pfetts of all the sayd lands & tents & other the p'mysse w<sup>th</sup> their appurtenances last before resyted duryng her naturall lyff to the entent that she shall paye all my detts & legacs and all suche annuities or gyfts conteyned & specified in the sayd awarde whyche of the p'rt of my sayd sonne Wyllm ar to be p'formed fulfylld & kept moreover as cons'nyng my testament in the distribution of my goods & catells made the day & yere fyrst above wrytten I the said Thomas Hawe al Hawes do wyll to the pore mennys box of Solyhull afforesayd xij<sup>d</sup> Itme I geve & bequethe to my sayd sonne Wyllm Hawes the standyng beddsted w<sup>th</sup> the koveryng of syrbyn tree in my nether pler and the worcer of the two newe fetherbedds the secunde bolster of fethers one pyllowe of fethers one payre of the secunde blanketts one of the woven cov'letts one payre of shets of the tere of hempe the greatest chest & a lytell coffer w<sup>th</sup> obydence in the great chamber the hangyngs of tappystre in the hall w<sup>th</sup> the benches in the same the greatest brasse pott the greatest broche ten wyte leads and one yoke of sterys of iij yers of age And I geve to my godson Thomas Hawes sonne of the sayd Wyllm Hawes my yongest amblyng mare fole And to ev'y of thyr other chyldern an ewe shyppe or v<sup>s</sup> in money Itm I geve to evry of my daughter hatleys chyldern an ewe shippe or v<sup>s</sup> in money Itm yf water Chambur my sonne in lawe or hys wyff do not vex troble or shewe my executrice of & for any of my goods or catells then I wyll to my daughter Margarette his wyff a cowe & a peire of hempton shets And

to evry of her cheldern an ewe or v<sup>s</sup> in money Itm yf Thomas Jackson my sonne in lawe or hys wyff do not vex molest or troble my executrice for any of my goods or cattells then I wyll and geve to my doughter Elizabeth hys wyff one cowe the worst fether bedd & a peare of hempen shets And to my cosyn Thomas her sonne a wenyng calfe and to evry of hys brethern & syster a ewe shyppe or v<sup>s</sup> in monney Itm I geve to my syster Elizabeth an heyfer of ij yers of age And to my cosyn Anne her doughter one heyfer calfe of one yere of age And the same to be kept by myne executr untill the same have a calfe And I geve to my syster Katyn Smalwood an heyfer calfe or a styere calfe of one yere of age And to my syster Anne Gebons an yerelynge calfe Itm I geve to Isabell Whetnall a weynyng calfe And to evry other of my s'vnts xl<sup>d</sup> And to Chrystofer mylwardes wyff xx<sup>d</sup> The rest of all my goods & catells not bequeathed (my detts legacs & funeralle payed I geve & bequethe to my welbeloved wyff Elyner whome I make & ordeyn my sole executrice of thys my last Wyll & testament And I ordeyn Thomas Waryng gentylman & Roger Eyewyt gentylman Stewards of the citie of Coventre my ov'seers and I geve to ether of theym to se this my wyll & testament pformed xl<sup>s</sup>. In wytnesse wherof I have to thys my psent wyll & testament sette my seale the day & yere fyrst above wrytten

L S

by me Thomas Hawes



Signature of Thomas Hawes to will, 1574.

COPY OF INVENTORY OF PERSONAL ESTATE OF  
THOMAS HAWES AT LICHFIELD PROBATE  
REGISTRY

The Inventorye of all the goods &  
cattells of M<sup>r</sup>. Thoms Hawes late  
of Solyhull in the Countye of Warr  
gent deceased taken the xv<sup>th</sup> of June  
An<sup>o</sup> 1574 & p'syd by Robt Higgin-  
son John brockehurste Thoms  
Sannders Barnabe Holbache &  
Willm Cotterell

**In the hall**

Ip'mis one framed table towe smale tables on rounde table iiij formes on cupborde ij cheres ij joyned stoles	} xiiij <sup>s</sup> iiij <sup>d</sup>
Item ij carpetts viij quyshynes certayne hinginges	} xviij <sup>s</sup>

**In the ov' pler**

Item on framed table on cupbord on forme ij cheres on great chest & ij setles	} viij <sup>s</sup> viij <sup>d</sup>
Ite on standinge bedd on fetherbed one flockebedd ij blanketts one red saye, on keverlett of Arras on boul- str ij pyllowes iiij curtaynes jx quy- shins one carpett & certeyne hing- yngs of saye	} iiij <sup>u</sup> xiiij <sup>s</sup> iiij <sup>d</sup>

**In the gret  
chamber**

Item on gret chest one coffer on cupbord one chere ij lytell formes certayne old hanginges of saye ij wyndowe quyshings	} xiiij <sup>s</sup>
--	----------------------

Ite on standinge bedd on truclebed one fetherbed ij blanketts ij blew hillings one boulater ij pyllowes & iiij saye curtaynes	} xli <sup>s</sup>
--	--------------------



In the deyhew  
chamber

Ite one cupbord on coffer on kym-  
nell ij powderinge tubbes on bord iij } vj<sup>s</sup>  
shylves & certayne old wodden vessels

In y<sup>e</sup> dey howse

Item on borde on on ches presse } v<sup>s</sup>  
certayne mylke vessels

In the bultinge  
hose

Item on knedinge troffe on bul-  
tinge tubbe & certayne trynnen ves- } ij<sup>s</sup>  
sell

In y<sup>e</sup> kytchine

Item ij pannes one great potte iiij  
potts a posnett ij dabnetts iiij cal-  
dorns on old choffrone on skellet a  
cullender a skimmer ij gredyarns ij } iiij<sup>u</sup>  
chaffingdishes ij great broches ij } xvij<sup>s</sup>  
small broches A payre of Rackes } viij<sup>d</sup>  
a payre of cobbardes iiij payre of  
potthockes on potthingles ij payre of  
tonges on fyrsholve on fyrforke ij  
landyarns on bronderde on spyce  
morter

Ite ij drippingge pannes on fryinge  
pane iiij candlestickes a lattenbason } viij<sup>s</sup>

Ite on bason & a ewer ij handba-  
sons & platters viij pewter dishes vj  
porrengers xij sawsers on butter- } xxxiiij<sup>s</sup>  
dyshe one cremdishe iiij saults one } iiij<sup>d</sup>  
pewter cupp xvij spones ij chamber  
potts

In y<sup>e</sup> yelinge  
house

Ite on steping fatt on brewinge  
fatte iiij old barrells iiij old lomes on } viij<sup>s</sup>  
old coffer

## In lynens

Ite v payre & a halfe of flaxen shetes ix payre of hempton shetes ix payre of noggen shetes iij flaxen table clothes & on dyaper table clothe ix hempton table clothes iij dossine & a halfe of table napkyns xi towels viij flaxen pyllowbewers viij hempton pillobeweres iij cupbord clothes	} viij <sup>11</sup>
Item in apparrell	} iij <sup>11</sup>
Item ix kyne & on bull	} xvj <sup>11</sup> } xiiij <sup>s</sup> } iij <sup>d</sup>
Ite ij threyere old steres	} iij <sup>11</sup> } xiiij <sup>s</sup> } iij <sup>d</sup>
Ite viij oxen & steres	} xvij <sup>11</sup>
Item viij two yere olds	} viij <sup>11</sup>
Item viij yerlinges	} v <sup>11</sup> vj <sup>s</sup> } viij <sup>d</sup>
Ite ix weynings	} lvj <sup>s</sup> iij <sup>d</sup>
Ite xiiij shepe	} liij <sup>s</sup> iij <sup>d</sup>
Ite iij mares one fyllye on yere-linge colte ij suckinge colts	} vj <sup>11</sup> xiiij <sup>s</sup> } iij <sup>d</sup>
Item viij store swyne	} xxxiiij <sup>s</sup> } iij <sup>d</sup>
Item corne on the grounde	} xvij <sup>11</sup> } xiiij <sup>s</sup> } iij <sup>d</sup>
Ite on wane on tombrell one plowe one ox harrow ij smale harrowes w <sup>th</sup> yokes & twoes to the same belonginge	} xl <sup>s</sup>

Ite on mattocke on ax on byll on	} <sup>x<sup>s</sup></sup>
yron wedge on sawe ij nagers one	
spade on sholve ij shef pickes ij	
diuckpyckes on saddle ij brdles	
<i>Some totalis vj<sup>xx</sup> iij<sup>ll</sup> xij<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup></i>	

Proved at Lichfield on the 27<sup>th</sup> October 1574 by the Executrix.

### COPY OF THE WILL AND CODICIL OF WILLIAM HAWES AT LICHFIELD PROBATE REGISTRY

In the name of god so be it: The first daye of Aprill in the yeare of our Lord god 1609 I William Hawe als Hawes of Hillfieldes Hall in the parishe of Solihull in the countie of Warr: gent. with perfect mynde consideringe the frailtie of all fleshe innummerable wayes everie hower beholdinge death the due rewarde of sinne: As also that I must leave unto the worlde all such landes goodes & cattalls whereof it hathe pleased god to give me the use in this worlde: doe ordaine constitute and make this my last Will & testament as followethe. vz. First I comend & render againe my soule into the handes of that most mercifull god from whom I received it, which although it hath bene here defiled with all kinde of sinnes & iniquities whereunto fleshe & bloude through the fall of our first parents is naturally inclined: yet I doe beleve & hope assuredlye that thorow the love & mercie of god (who by his holie Spirit hath wrought true & unfeigned repentannce in my hart with a steadfast faith in his promisses) I shall by that bloudie sacrifice death & resurrection of Jesus Christ his sonne my onely Redeemer Saviour & mediator to be purged & made pertaker of his heavenlie Kingdome, & that my Soule after it ys departed out of this prison of the bodie, shall passe from hense into a place of rest & blessednesse present w<sup>t</sup> Christ beholdinge the face of god in the fellowship of all gods elect with happie joye expecting the full pfectio<sup>n</sup> and consumation of the promised glorie both of soule & bodie at the coming againe of Christ my Redeemer and Judge at the last daye. And in the meane time my will & desire ys that my bodie when my Soule hath lefte it be retourned againe to the earth from whence it came And that it be decentlie buried in the parish church of Solihull

aforesaid in that chappell where my father, one of my sonnes, and one of my sonnes children are alreadie buried. And after the buriall of my corps in that place, then my will is that my executrix shall that daye deliver unto the Churchwardens for that time beinge v markes to be distributed by them amongst the poorest inhabitants within the seid parish of Solihull: And as concerning my landes tēfts & hereditam<sup>ts</sup> Albeit I have assured them unto my sonne Edmond Hawes reservinge onelie to myself an estate for tearme of my lief without impechm<sup>t</sup> of waste, and my wives jointure or dower of parte thereof duringe her lief accordinge to the lawes of this lande: yet my will ys (and I trust my sonne in regard of his dutie towards me & his mother will yeld thereunto) (And hereby I doe devise) that Ursula my welbeloved wief & his loving moth<sup>r</sup> so longe as shee doth remaine sole & unmarried shall continue & abide still in my seid mansion howse called Hillfields Hall & there to have & hold the chamber where shee lyeth, the middle chamber, and the maides chamber adioyninge with free libertie of the use of other necessarie romes & implem<sup>ts</sup> of howshold now within the seid howse outhowses gardens and orchards and yf shee shalbe minded to make her doue provision for howsekeepinge there, that then shee may have such grounds nere adioyninge as by the overseers of this my last Will & testam<sup>t</sup> hereunder named shalbe thought requisite, and my sonn to have to the like valew in such other groundes as are shalbe allotted for her jointure or dower elsewhere: And as touchinge the disposinge of my goodes and cattalls my will ys and I doe hereby will & dispose give & bequeath unto Constance Hawes my daughter youngest daughter three hundred poundes to be payed to her in maner & forme followinge vz. one hundred poundes the daye of her marriage or when she shall accomplish the age of xxiiij yeares or severallie within three yeares next after my deceasse as in a codicile hereunto annexed apeareth Towards the paym<sup>t</sup> of which three hundred pounds my seid sonne Edmond Hawes hath received one hundred & fiftie pounds as by his obligation made to me & my seid daughter bearinge date xij<sup>th</sup> Januarie 1604 apeareth. And fiftie poundes more he hath promised to give unto his seid sister the daye of her mariage or when she shall accomplishe the seid age of xxiiij yeares In consideracon whereof & other consideracons me movinge besides



the performance now of my promise to him to leave unto him standinge & uncutt downe timber trees and other trees to the value of two hundred poundes which I might have fallen & were to spared besides others sufficient for necessarie uses. I do hereby will & dispose give & bequeath unto him upon condicions herein hereafter mencioned these percells of howshold stuff & implem<sup>ts</sup> of howshold goods & cattalls following vz. The table borde with the frame & two square tables in the hall in my seid mansion howse the table bord with the frame the lose cubbords in the parler there, the best standinge bedsteed in the chamber over the pler & the cubbord there, the two bedsteeds & cubbord in the chamber called the Servinge mens chamber, also the brewinge lead the malt mill the Irons in the kitchin chimney, the ewtinge fatt & the garners in the outhouses Allso all my bookes mappes & deske after my wief hath taken out of my deske all therein conteyned the boxes evidences & papers now in my Studie & gallerie or els where (except all such english bookes as my wief shall like best to have for her owne use. And moreover my will ys that all these aforeseid percells here given & bequeathed unto my sonne shalbe prayed by my seid overseers or other indifferent friendes, and what they shall want of the full valew of threscore poundes the same to be made out by my wief to that value in beddinge lynnyn brasse pewter or other howshold stuff & cattalls such as my wief shall think my sonne shall have most need of & be most requisite for him, provided alwaies & my will ys that yf my sonne doe not paye the somes of money above named due to be payed by him by his bonde without suite in lawe and the fiftie poundes promised to be payed as aforeseid towards his sister Constance porcon & preferm<sup>t</sup> that then my seid gifte unto him of all or anie the foreseid percells of howshold stuffe goods & cattalls to be voide & my executrix to have them for the better performance of this my last will and testam<sup>t</sup> anie thing herein conteined to the contrarie notwithstandinge. And likewise my will is that yf my sonne do not clearlye acquit discharge & save harmlesse my executrix of & from all maner of bondes billes & obligacons wherein & wherby I do stande bounde ioyntlie & severallie with my seide sonne to divers persons in divers sommes of money as by the seid bills and obligacons doth apeare, & for the paym<sup>t</sup> whereof by him & acquitinge of me I have his severall

bonds and obligations under his owne hand & seale before divers wittnesses, that then my seid gift unto him of all or anie the seid pcells of howshold stufte goods or cattalls or anie thinge els wherebye he ys to have anie benefit by or from me be utterlye voide. And as concerninge the rest of my children vz my daughter Elizabeth & my daughter Ursula my will ys that my executrix do give to eith<sup>r</sup> of them some pcell of linnen howshold stufte or money as witness of my remembrance of them, as she shall think best And . . . . everie one of their children & my sonnes children. The residue of all my goodes & cattalls not here given & bequeathed in maner & forme aforesaid my debts & legaces payed I give & bequeth unto Ursula my wief to her owne use & benefit whom I do ordaine constitute & make my sole executrix of this my last Will & testam<sup>t</sup>. Also I do request my welbeloved cosins & approved good freinds M<sup>r</sup>. Rignold Browne esquier my loving broth<sup>r</sup> in law M<sup>r</sup>. Michaell Colles, my cosen Humfrey Colles his sonne & my beloved Sonne in law M<sup>r</sup>. William Sheldon to overseers of this my last Will & testam<sup>t</sup> & to be freindlie meanes to see the same quietlie and faithfullie executed & performed accordinge to my true intent & meaninge the judgm<sup>t</sup> & discussinge whereof I whollie refere to their wisdomes. And unto everie of them for a kinde remembrance I give x<sup>s</sup> in gold or severall ringes of gold to that valewe In wisse herof I have to this my last Will & testam<sup>t</sup> writtin with my owne hande subscribed my name to both the leaves therof the same filed together have sealed with my seale ringe the day & yeare first above written Signed sealed & dd the xv<sup>th</sup> daye of Septemb<sup>r</sup> 1611 in the presence of

Thomas Brockhurst

Richard Blunte

John Miles

Henrie Newey

W<sup>ch</sup> three last menconed

have put to their marke

A Schedule or codicile made xxjx of August 1611 the same to be annexed unto my last will & testam<sup>t</sup> as percell therof

I give & bequeth will & dispose unto William Hawes my sonnes sonne fyve poundes in money

It unto Jane Hawes my sonnes daughter the best of my yearlinge cow calves.

It unto Constance Hawes my daughter my threeyeare old heifure w<sup>ch</sup> calves this present moneth of August.

Itme my last will & testam<sup>t</sup> ys now that whereas my wief & my sonne are to paye unto my daughter Constance three hundred poundes that the first pay thereof do beginne within one half yeare next after my death And then my sonne to paye one hundred marks & my wief xxxiiij<sup>li</sup> vj<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> yf my seid daughter be then living. And likewise by them so much that day twelve moneth next followinge yf she be then living. And likewise by them so much that day two yeares yf she be then livinge. And that my daughter Constance yf her broth<sup>r</sup> do well & orderlie paye the seid sommes by him to be payde shall not take anie advantage of the forfeiture of his bond mentioned in my Will but the sonne uppon true paym<sup>t</sup> of the seid somes of money he ys to paye my seid daughter shall have his seid bonds.

Proved by the sole Executrix on the 14<sup>th</sup> January 1611/12.  
Amount of Inventory of personal property, £378 11 10.

#### COPY OF WILL OF URSULA HAWES AT LICHFIELD PROBATE REGISTRY

In the name of God Amen the Five and twentieth day of Marche in the yeare of o<sup>r</sup> Lord God one thousand sixe hundreth and fourteene I Ursula Hawes of Solyhull in the Countie of Warwicke Widdowe Late wife of William deceased consideringe the certaintie of death & the uncertayntye when it shall please god to call me doe therefore in good remembrance & pfecte health to thende that noe controversie may be amonge my children declare this to be my last Will & Testament in manner & forme hereafter followinge. First I comende my Soule to almightie god who gave me & to Jesus Christ my redeemer trustinge to be Saved onelie by his death and passion and not by any other meanes and my bodie to the earth to be buried near the bodie of my sayd late husbnde at the oversight and discretion of my executrix and overseers of this my last will. And touchinge my worldlie goods my minde is that they be bestowed to these purposes hereafter menconed. Itm I give to the poore

of Solihull Fortie Shillings. Item I give and bequeathe to my daughter Jane my sonne Edmunds daughter a bedstead a Featherbedde a boulster a flocbed two pillowes three blanketts a payre of Flaxen Sheets a payre of hempen sheets two payre of pillowbeares one of them flaxen two table cloathes one of them flaxen two cupberd clothes two dozen of napkinnes one of them flaxen two towells one of them flaxen. Item my will is that my sonne Edmunde Hawes shall deliver to the sayd Jane his daughter a cow with her encrease w<sup>ch</sup> her grandfather gave her & I doe alsoe give her my Second coverlett. Itm I give & bequeath to my daughter my sonne Edmunds wife my damaske gowne and the two flaundere Candlesticke that Stand in the hall. Itm I give to my daughter Sheldon my weddinge Ringe. Item I give to my Daughter Hunte a little silver Spooone. Item I give & bequeath to my sonne William Hawes my sonne Edmunds sonne five Pounds & his grandfathers sealing Ringe praying his father to see it delivered w<sup>tin</sup> on yeare after my decease. Item I give to all the rest of my sonne Edmonds Children tenn shillinge a pcese (excepting the sayd William & Jane Hawes. Item I give to my sonne Edmunds daughter Ursula Hawes twentie shillings & a payr of sheetes. Item I give to Jane Huggesford my goddaughter twentie shillings & a payre of sheetes. Item I give unto M<sup>r</sup>. Noells Daughter my goddaughter twentie shillings. Itm I give & bequeath unto my brother M<sup>r</sup>. Michaell Colles three silver spoones. Item I give & bequeath to my sister Colles my brother Michaells wife my silver sunne. Itm I give and bequeath to my Cosen M<sup>r</sup>. Humphrye Colles twentie shillings. Itm I give & bequeath to my sonne Edmunde Hawes all my Englishe bookes waynes harrowes plowes ladders & chaynes with all things thereunto apptayninge and all the rest of my Iron stuffe without the Dore. And also a truckle bedstead. And the residue of all my goods & chattelles & housholde stuffe (my Debtes Legacies & funerall charges payd & discharged) I give & bequeath to Constance Hawes my daughter whome I doe constitute & appoynte to be my Executrix of this my last Will & testament. And I doe appoynte my sonne Sheldon & my sonne Edmunde Hawes to be my overseers of this my last Will & Testamente to see it be pformed. And I give to my sonne Sheldon a silver goblett for his paynes. & I give to my sonne Edmonde Hawes a silver goblett for his

paynes. In wittness whereof I have hereunto put my hande & seale the day & yeare first above written.

Ursula Hawes, her marke

V H

Signed sealed published & declared to be her last Will in the p<sup>r</sup>sence of—Humphrey Colles—Thomas Aylesburye.

Memorand<sup>m</sup> that the seconde day of Octob<sup>r</sup> Ann<sup>o</sup> Dni 1615 the within named Ursula Hawes did raze out of the within written Will these things or words followinge vid my bedstead w<sup>h</sup> I now Lye in my cubborde in the hall & a little square boarde & my cubborde in the parlour & my chayre & two stooles in the parlour w<sup>h</sup> she sayd she would give to her daught<sup>r</sup> Constance the rest of the Legacies within contayned she did the same day confirme. In the p<sup>r</sup>sence of me Jo: Heelinge.

Proved the 3<sup>rd</sup> day of November 1615 by the Executrix Constance Hawes.

## HAWESES IN SOLIHULL PARISH REGISTER

Solihull (Warwickshire) Parish Register, vol. 53 of the Parish Register Society.

### BAPTISMS

PAGE	DATE	NAME
12	Apr. 11 1553	Thomas Hawe
14	Aug. 20 1558	Thomas Hawe
16	June 26 1559	Jane Hawe
16	Feb. 25 1569	George Hawse
16	Apr. 7 1560	Elizabeth Hawse
16	Jan. 19 1560	Frances Hawe
17	Oct. 19 1561	John Hawe
17	May 30 1563	William Hawe
19	Mar. 23 1567	John Hawe
20	Apr. 25 1568	Katherine Hawe
21	June 27 1569	Yewen Hawe
21	Sept. 24 1570	Anne Hawe
21	Oct. 17 1570	Ellen Hawe
22	Apr. 13 1571	Mary Hawe
23	Dec. 20 1573	Edward Hawe
24	Mar. 4 1574	Jone Hawe
25	Nov. 5 1576	Margerie Hawe
25	Dec. 23 1576	Robert Hawe
27	Jan. 7 1578	Wenefrite Hawe
33	Last day of July 1586	Alice Hawes
33	Nov. 9 1586	Thomas Hawes

## BAPTISMS—Continued

PAGE	DATE	NAME
34	Dec. 9 1588	Humphry Hawe
37	Nov. 29 1592	Marie Hawe
37	Feb. 8 1593	Edmund Bawes [sic]
38	Aug. 2 1595	Arthur Hawe
39	Feb. 20 1596	John & Ellen Hawe
40	Dec. 27 1598	William Hawe
43	Oct. 5 1600	Mrs. Jane Hawe, dau. of Mr. Edmund Hawe, gent, of Hillfeild
43	Jan. 21 1600	Richard Hawe, Widneiende
44	Jan. 19 1601	Mrs. Ursula Hawes, dau. of Mr. Edmund Hawes, Hillfeild
46	Jan. 12 1602	Mrs. Lucie Hawe, Hillfeild
46	Feb. 22 1602	John Hawe, Widneyende
49	Dec. 30 1604	Mr. William, son of Mr. Edmond Hawe, Hillfeild
50	Apr. 13 1605	Thomas Hawe, Widneiende, son of John Hawe
53	Oct. 26 1606	Mrs. Ursula, dau. of Mr. Edmund Hawes, Hillfeild
55	Oct. 25 1607	Mrs. Marie, dau. of Mr. Edmond Hawes, of Shellie
57	Oct. 28 1608	Sara, dau. of Thomas Hawe, of Shirlie Street
59	Sept. 5 1609	Mrs. Ann, dau. of Mr. Edmond Hawes, Shellie
61	Nov. 16 1610	George, son of John Hawe, Widneiende
62	Apr. 23 1611	Mr. John, son of Mr. Edmond Hawes, Shellie
65	"The fifteenth daie of October, Mr. Edmonde, sonne of Mr. Edmonde Hawes, de Hillfeeldes" (1619)	
72	Aug. 18 1616	Elizabeth, dau. of Edmond Hawes, gent.
73	June 18 (or 28) 1618	Mrs. Ruth, dau of Mr. Edmund Hawes, Hillfeild
87	Dec. 16 1629	Agnes, dau. of John Hawe
89	Mar. 20 1630	Thomas, son of John Hawe
91	Sept. 30 1632	John, son of John Hawes
94	Oct. 5 1634	Elizabeth, dau. of John Hawe
96	Sept. 25 1636	Sarah, dau. of John Hawe
98	June 10 1638	William, son of John Hawe, of Sherlie
100	Mar. 15 1639	George, son of John Hawe
116	Dec. 22 1657	John, son of John Hawe
117	June 29 1659	Elizabeth, dau. of Thomas Haw
119	Apr. 23 1661	William, son of Thomas Hawe
120	Nov. 30 1662	Mary, dau. of Thomas Hawe
122	Oct. 22 1665	John, son of Thomas Hawe

## MARRIAGES

126	Nov. 23 1539	William Smallwood and Katherine Hawe
127	Nov. 15 1544	John Savage and Anne Hawse
128	Feb. 10 1548	Humphrey Botte and Anne Hawe
129	Nov. 24 1551	John Hawe and Ellen Cotterell
130	May 17 1557	Edward Hawe & Elizabeth Rastell
132	Apr. 24 1570	Wm. Shawe and Joane Hawe
133	Nov. 27 1572	Richard Westcote and Margarette Hawe
136	Jan. 31 1584	Richard Hewes [sic] and Marie Marsson
136	Nov. 30 1587	Humphrey Pinninge and Joane Hawes

## MARRIAGES—Continued

PAGE	DATE	NAME
137	Oct. 16 1588	Mr. William Sheldon and Mrs. Elisabeth Hawes
138	Nov. 8 1595	Mr. Raphael Hunt and Mrs. Ursula Hawes
145	Nov. 2 1624	Arthur Hawe and Alice Welles
146	Nov. 29 1628	Thomas Blun and Anne Hawe
146	Feb. 2 1629	John Hawe and Elizabeth Tandle
147	Feb. 21 1632	George Lynes and Elizabeth Hawe
150	Nov. 6 1642	Wm. Hawes and Ann London
153	June 9 1658	Thomas Haw and Mary Brockhurst

## BURIALS

156	Sept. 27 1539	Robarte Hawe
156	Oct. 1 1540	Jane Hawe
164	Mar. 9 1556	John Hawe
164	Mar. 15 1556	Joane Sawe [sic]
164	Apr. 3 1557	Ellen Hawe
166	Aug. 21 1558	John Hawe
166	"The six and twentithe of Auguste, Thoms Hawe, gent" (1558)	
167	Dec. 16 1558	Agnes Hawe
168	July 11 1559	Jane Hawe
168	Oct. 10 1559	Mrs. Jone Hawe
170	Mar. 9 1566	Alice Hawe
170	Dec. 29 1565	Wm. Hawan
171	Oct. 15 1567	Joane Hawe
172	Aug. 22 1569	Margerie Hawe
173	Jan. 13 1571	Richard Hawe
173	June 11 1572	Mary Haw
174	"The xijth daie of June, Thomas Hawe, gents" (June 12, 1574)	
174	Feb. 20 1574	Edward Hawe
175	May 19 1576	Elizabeth Hawe
176	Oct. 1 1577	Robert Hawe
178	Jan. 22 1582	Edward Hawe
181	Mar. 1 1589	John Hawe
184	Jan. 29 1596	Richard Hawes, infant
184	Feb. 27 1596	John & Ellen Hawe, infants
188	Nov. 18 1600	Christian Hawe, pauper
188	Mar. 11 1600	John Hawe, Shirlie
189	Apr. 16 1602	Mrs. Ursula Hawes, Hilffeld
189	Aug. 13 1602	Anne Hawe, pauper
193	Apr. 21 1605	Thomas Hawe, infantulus
197	Aug. 8 1608	Margerie Hawe, widow, Shirlie
200	Dec. 26 1610	Edward Turner, servant of Thome Hawe, Shirlie
202	"The xxxjth daie of October, Mr. William Hawes, gent, de Hill Fieldes" (Oct. 31, 1611)	
206	July 29 1614	Wm. Hawe, Burgag, <sup>aa</sup> pauper
207	Oct. 26 1615	Mrs. Ursula Hawes, Shellie
209	Oct. 12 1616	Maria Hawe
209	June 22 1617	Sara, dau. of Thome Haw
219	Apr. 30 1626	Arthur Hawe
219	Jan. 6 1626	Thomas Hawe
219	Jan. 3 1626	Richard Hewes [sic]
221	Aug. 13 1628	Mary Haw

<sup>aa</sup>The borough, or town.

## BURIALS—Continued

PAGE	DATE	NAME
937	June 6 1635	Anne Hawe, wid.
931	Jan. 1 1640	George, son of John Haws
939	Aug. 10 1659	Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Hawe
940	July 29 1660	Sara, dau. of John Hawe
940	July 28 1661	Wm., son of Thomas Hawe
941	Feb. 26 1662	John Hawe, the elder
941	Mar. 1 1662	John Hawe, the younger



## GRESWOLD

The Greswolds were an old family of Warwickshire, originating apparently in Kenilworth, and afterward extending into Solihull and Rowington, the Solihull branch being the richest and most distinguished.<sup>a</sup> The pedigree is as follows:<sup>b</sup>

1 JOHN Greswold, of Kenilworth, who married a daughter of William Hugford of Ulverley Hall, Solihull. His son was

2 RALPH Greswold, who married Margaret Dadly. His son was

3 RICHARD Greswold, of Solihull, who married the daughter and heiress of William Grome, of Kimenhall. He died before 1412. Sons:

4 WILLIAM Greswold, of Solihull.

THOMAS Greswold, of Solihull, who married Christiana<sup>c</sup> —, and was mentioned as one of the persons of quality in the county in 1433-4,<sup>d</sup> where he was justice of the peace, 1442-1458. From 1437 to 1443 he had custody of the manors of Solihull and Sheldon for the King, and in 1450 of the forfeited estate of Robert de Arden. In 1437-8 he gave to the chantry £3 yearly for the priest to say mass daily for the King and for himself and for their souls after death and the souls of his parents.<sup>e</sup>

4 WILLIAM Greswold, of Solihull, married Isabel, daughter and heiress of John Grange. His son was

5 JOHN Greswold, of Solihull, married Margaret<sup>f</sup> daughter and heiress of Henry Bromley, of Longdon Hall. Her mother was Alice, daughter and heiress of — Hawes and one of her ancestors married the daughter and heiress of Wil-

<sup>a</sup>Forgotten Shrines, by Dom Bede Camm (1910), 330. It was a later branch of the family that spelled the name with a final e.

<sup>b</sup>12 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 60, 61; Pemberton, 42; Chancery Proceedings quoted.

<sup>c</sup>2 Dugdale, 951.

<sup>d</sup>Pemberton, 54.

<sup>e</sup>Id., 12, 83. Hannett (197) gives an account of the Greswolds in some respects different.

<sup>f</sup>Pemberton, 42; 12 Harl. Soc. Pubs., 60, 61.

liam Hawes. In June, 1456, styled John Greswold, Esq., he is witness to a deed in Solihull.<sup>9</sup> Nov. 25, 1481, described as John Greswold, of Solihull, the elder, Esq., he conveyed a croft in that parish to Robert Greswold of the same place.<sup>h</sup> In 1493 the entry of John Greswold and Margeria, his wife, and for the soul of Margeria, is made in the list of members in the Guild of Knowle.<sup>i</sup> These may be the John and Margaret we are writing about here. He had the following children and perhaps others:

JOHN Greswold, of Longdon Hall, who married Elizabeth — and died June 20, 1515. An inquisition post mortem on his estate was held at Warwick Feb. 26, 1516-1517. He left Richard<sup>j</sup> Greswold, his son and heir, aged 30 years; two unmarried daughters, Anne and Margaret, and five other sons, Thomas, John, Edwin, Roger and Robert at the date of his will Dec. 9, 1511. He had large holdings of land in Solihull and vicinity. He is styled esquire in the inquisition.<sup>k</sup>

CHRISTIAN, married John West.

6 ANN, married Thomas Hawes in 1465.<sup>l</sup>

The arms of the Greswolds were: Argent, a fess gules between two greyhounds courant sable.<sup>m</sup> In Yardley, Worcestershire, later generations were living. In the church of that Parish the Greswold arms quarter Groome, Grange, Hawes, and others.<sup>n</sup> Edward and Mathew Griswold, of Kenilworth, brothers, came to Connecticut in 1639 and left issue.<sup>o</sup>

In two suits by John Greswold, of Solihull, esquire, against William West, ascribed to the period between 1475 and 1485, it appears that Thomas Greswold, late of Solihull, was the brother of William Greswold, who was father of John Greswold and grandfather of the plaintiff; that said Thomas con-

<sup>9</sup>Hamper on Dugdale.

<sup>h</sup>2 An. Deeds, 397.

<sup>i</sup>Reg. of Guild of Knowle, 108.

<sup>j</sup>He was buried in Solihull Church in 1537, where he had an inscription (Dugdale; Pemberton, 170.)

<sup>k</sup>Inquisitions post Mortem, Chancery, 9 Henry VIII, Ser. 2, vol. 32, No. 56, in Public Record Office, London.

<sup>l</sup>See Hannett, 199, 200; Belchier, *supra*, p. 43½.

<sup>m</sup>8 Col. Top. & Gen., 304; 12 Harl. Soc. Puba., 60.

<sup>n</sup>1 Grazebrooke, 238 & 239.

<sup>o</sup>Notes and Queries, 6th series, Vol. 12, p. 327; 2 Savage, 316, 317.

veyed in trust to John Greswold, the younger, and John West and to others whom they survived, all his lands and tenements in Solihull, Moseley and Yardley, and made his will that they should hold a tenement in Solihull called Lancers Lands (a part of which formed a tenement called the Crown) and all his other lands and tenements in Solihull "lying within a mile about a ten<sup>t</sup>, late William Hawes," to the use of said Thomas Greswold and his wife during their lives, with remainder to John Greswold, son of William Greswold and father of the plaintiff, for his life and after his decease to his eldest son and heirs of his body and in default of such issue to his next son and his issue and so on till the said lands and tenements were vested in the plaintiff, younger son of John son of William Greswold; that the said John West contended contrary to the will that all the lands and tenements in Yardley and Moseley and the tenement called the Crown fell to his wife Christian, daughter of John Greswold, son of William; and that, John West having died, she in her widowhood had enfeoffed William West, her son, whereby the plaintiff was likely to be disinherited.<sup>p</sup> In the suit of John Plummer and Margaret, his wife, against John Greswold and Thomas Greswold, ascribed to the period between 1480 and 1483, it appears that the defendants held or had held lands in Yardley and Solihull of Johanna Hoore.<sup>q</sup> In the suit of Dame Anne Arundell against John Greswold, Esquire, ascribed to the period between 1504 and 1515, it is alleged that Thomas Greswold at one time held a third of the manor of Solihull, but that it was then in the possession of the plaintiff, and demand was made that the defendant, son of John Greswold, executor and next heir of said Thomas Greswold, should give up the deeds.<sup>r</sup>

<sup>p</sup>Early Chancery Proceedings, vol. II, Bundle 57, No. 26, and Bundle 58, No. 175.

<sup>q</sup>Early Chancery Proceedings, vol. II, Bundle 61, No. 78.

<sup>r</sup>Early Chancery Proceedings, vol. IV, Bundle 276, No. 1.

## BROME

### THE SEAT

The seat of Nicholas Brome and his father John was Bad-desley Clinton,<sup>a</sup> a parish of Warwickshire about 7 m. N. W. of the town of Warwick and about 6 m. S. E. of Solihull. The parish embraces 1366 acres, and its population was 130 in 1801, 158 in 1861, 146 in 1901, and 140 in 1911.<sup>b</sup> About 1730 the parish had 13 houses, of which four kept teams. Its population would have been about 65.<sup>c</sup> There is now in Bad-desley Clinton a Roman Catholic chapel, school and convent of Poor Clares (Colettines).<sup>d</sup> Baddesley Clinton was originally included in Henley-in-Arden. It received its surname from Sir Thomas de Clinton of Coleshill, Co. Warwick, who obtained the manor by marriage in the middle of the 13th Century.<sup>e</sup> In 1434 Nicholas Metley became possessed of it, who, dying in 1437, made Margaret Metley, his mother, Johanna, his wife, and Robert Catesby, his executors, and directed them to sell the manor of Baddesley Clinton and other property and employ the proceeds in masses for his soul and the souls of his ancestors. Soon thereafter Catesby purchased the manor of his co-executors.<sup>f</sup> The legality of this purchase seems to have been questioned. At any rate, the ownership of the manor was in controversy for many years. Dugdale (v. 2, p. 970) says that Catesby enjoyed his purchase "accordingly till after the battail of Northampton" (which was about XX years) but then did John Hugford of Emscote, in right of Margaret his wife, daughter and heir to the before speci-

---

<sup>a</sup>This must be distinguished from Baddesley Ensor in the same county.

<sup>b</sup> Vic. Hist. of Warsh., 186; English Census of 1911.

<sup>c</sup>2 Dugdale, 974.

<sup>d</sup>Norris, 82. Poor Clares are nuns of the sisterhood instituted at Assisi about 1212 by St. Clare. They have the Franciscan rule and habit. (Murray's New Eng. Dict.) Colettines are Poor Clares reformed by St. Collette (1381-1447). See the Catholic Encyclopaedia, p. 99, vol. 4.

<sup>e</sup>Norris, 3; 2 Dugdale, 970.

<sup>f</sup>Norris, 16-19; 2 Dugdale, 970.

<sup>g</sup>1460.

fied Nicholas Metley, enter upon it, and by the countenance of Richard Nevill Earl of Warwick, whose Steward he was, kept possession thereof during the whole life of the said Robert.<sup>a</sup> Howbeit, before the death of the same John Hugford,<sup>a</sup> Nich. Catesby, son and heir of Robert, made his entry upon it again, and from that time enjoyed it during the whole life of Hugford, and eleven years after, that the daughters and heirs of the said John . . . disseised him: whereupon the before mentioned Nich. Catesby, discerning the title to be so disputable, past it away unto John Brome,<sup>b</sup> a lawyer; by which means it came to the family of Ferrers.”<sup>c</sup> Baddesley Clinton Hall is one of the most celebrated specimens remaining of the defensive architecture (with moat and drawbridge) of the 15th century. In most, if not all, other cases, where the structure remains, the moat has been filled up and obliterated. Timmins<sup>d</sup> remarks (p. 77): “The military architectural remains in Warwickshire are more numerous and remarkable as to antiquity and interest than is generally supposed. Not only castles of great size and importance, but fortified houses are numerous, and deserve some record.” He divides (p. 78) castles into four classes, including: “(4) Castellated mansions, in which more peaceful times allowed the residence to predominate over the fortress, and yet to be ready for defence in case of need.” Again he says (p. 86): “Fortified manor houses became, in more peaceful times, houses for residence, in which the moat was the principal feature which remained of the old troublous times. The buildings became more decorative in style, and more like modern mansions.” “Baddesley Clinton . . . has almost an equal interest with Compton Wynyates as an ‘old moated grange.’ It lies near Knowle and Kingswood, in a large secluded and thickly timbered park, and has, happily, had no great alterations, internal or external, for several centuries. It is an old stone house, surrounded by a moat, over which a bridge has replaced an ancient drawbridge, and leads to a fine embattled gateway and a small but charming court, with beds of flowers, old half timber gables, and one side

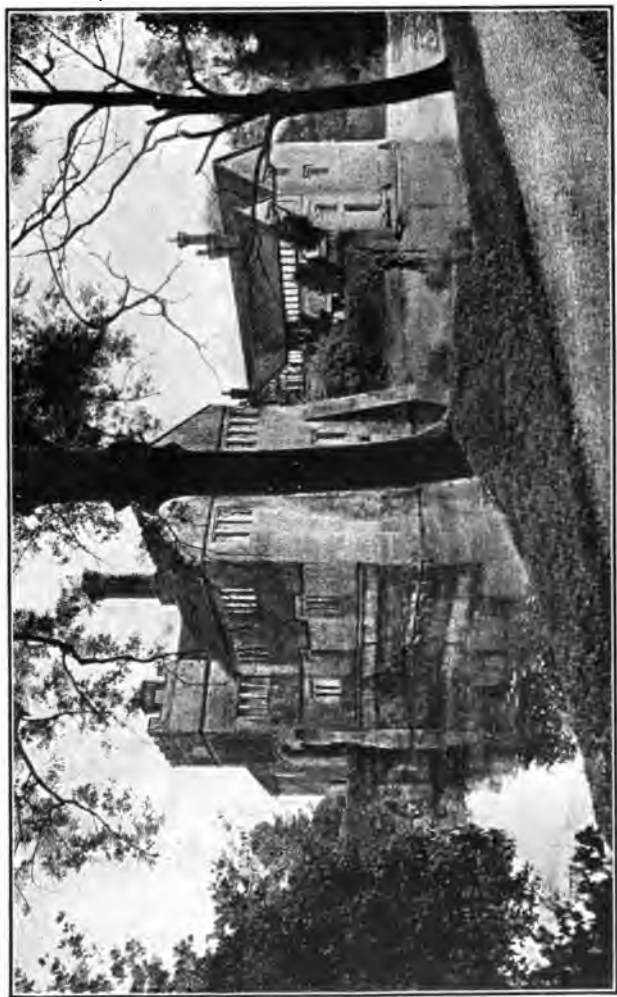
<sup>a</sup>He died in 1467 (*infra*, p. 100).

<sup>a</sup>He died in 1485-6 (I Dugdale, 280).

<sup>b</sup>He was then dead. It must have been his son Nicholas Brome.

<sup>c</sup>See also Norris, 19, 20, 26, 27.

<sup>d</sup>History of Warwickshire, by Samuel Timmins (1889).



BADDESLEY CLINTON HALL



of the quadrangle open to the moat. The interior of the hall has a delightful old-world look. Panelled walls and ceilings, old furniture, quaint old glass and china, tapestry hangings, old oak stairs, low long galleries, pleasant peeps through pretty windows, heraldic arms emblazoned in colours on the glass, or painted on the panels, all conspire to revive the life and surroundings of centuries ago. The general structure is of the latter half of the fifteenth century, and some of the gables, seen only from the inner court on one side of the moat, are of later date, perhaps the middle of the sixteenth century, while the latest portions<sup>e</sup> of the rooms, as to the furniture, is<sup>e</sup> probably two centuries old. In the reign of Henry IV (1399-1412) the manor was bought by John Brome (and the house is possibly as old as that date), and afterwards, in 1517, passed by marriage to the Ferrars (or Ferrers) family, with whom it remains. The hall is a most interesting relic of the old moated house period as to its external appearance, and as it has been held so long by one family, and had so few internal changes as to structure or furniture, it is famous as one of the sights of Warwickshire by all who have the good fortune to enter its fortalice gate.”<sup>f</sup> “Among the fortified manor houses which followed the military castles in more (or less) peaceful times, Warwickshire has several examples of exceptional interest. Baddesley Clinton, near Knowle, is the finest example, but is comparatively unknown, as it lies in a remote park distant from road or rail. It is charmingly picturesque, for it has a fine ancient moat surrounding its gray walls, and quaint gables and chimneys, and its pretty garden parterres surrounded on three sides by the rooms of the house, most of which belongs to the end of the fifteenth century, with some additions of later date, which, however, are so venerable and harmonious with the older parts that it is really an old-world, even to the rooms and furniture. Early in the fifteenth century it was the property of the Bromes, but soon afterwards it passed to the Ferrers family, with whom it now remains—an unbroken line of thirteen generations. It is beyond all doubt one of the two most interesting old houses in the county, perfect as a mere picture of old life and times, picturesque to an

<sup>e</sup>Sic.

<sup>f</sup>Timmins, 88.



unsurpassed degree, and historically memorable as the home of one of the early antiquaries of Warwickshire—Henry Ferrers, of Baddesley, the friend and fellow-worker of Sir William Dugdale and of Sir Symon Archer, to whom, as has been noted in an earlier chapter, the lovers of Warwickshire are eternally indebted for materials of history.”<sup>9</sup> Dom Bede Camm gives an illustration of Baddesley Clinton hall. He claims, as does Norris, that the hall has always been in the possession of Roman Catholics.<sup>10</sup> It has a private chapel. The parish church (Protestant) is a small and ancient structure. An article on Church Chests of the 12th and 13th Centuries in volume 14 of the *Archaeological Journal*, 2d Series, p. 295, speaking of Baddesley Clinton, says: “There is a chest here made of massive oak slabs, bound together with iron straps having foliated ends, whole of thirteenth century character.” The manor of Baddesley Clinton, beginning with Sir Edward Ferrers, was held in the male line through 13 generations of that name, the last being Marmion Edward Ferrers, born in 1813, who died in 1884. In 1867 he had married Rebecca Dulcibella, daughter of Abraham Orpen, Esq.<sup>11</sup> “In 1869 Mr. and Mrs. Ferrers came to reside in the old house at Baddesley Clinton, but the estate ‘had suffered so much for the faith, partly in fines and confiscations, partly in the fact that many properties were left away from its owners, out of the right line, because of religion,’ that it became impossible for them to retain it. In those days of anxiety Edward Heneage Dering<sup>12</sup> came happily to the rescue, and by reason of the regard and affection he had for Marmion Ferrers, and for the sake of a beautiful old place and the welfare of the Catholic faith he joyfully sacrificed a notable portion of his income to redeem it, and thus rendered the estate free from all embarrassment. And throughout his life he continued to restore and perfect it, and ultimately he re-entailed it on the nephew and heir of his beloved friend and associate.”<sup>13</sup> His wife having died, Mr. Dering in 1885 married

<sup>9</sup>Id., 236.

<sup>10</sup>*Forgotten Shrines* (1910), 319, 321. The writer visited the Hall and Church in August, 1911.

<sup>11</sup>Norris, 129.

<sup>12</sup>His wife's first husband was the uncle of Mrs. Ferrers. (Norris, 94.)

<sup>13</sup>Norris, 94.

Mrs. Ferrers and died in 1892.<sup>1</sup> His widow still occupies the Hall. The heir to the estate is Henry Ferrers Ferrers,<sup>2</sup> of Oswestry, Shropshire, whose mother was Constance Charlotte, sister of Marmion E. Ferrers."

#### THE FAMILY

The Brome<sup>o</sup> family, of Baddesley Clinton, were from Warwick and originally probably from Lapworth. In 1450 John Brome (father of Nicholas) stated that John Brome, his father, and all his ancestors "of tyme that no mynde remembereth" had been peaceably possessed among other things in Warwick of a place called Bromesplace.<sup>3</sup> The family first appears under the designation of de Brome. Hudson, in his book<sup>4</sup> on Lapworth (p. 274), among names appearing in early deeds, gives Roger de Brome between 1272 and 1307, Paulinus de Brome between 1346 and 1350, John de Brome<sup>5</sup> between 1361 and 1370, and John Brome<sup>6</sup> between 1388 and 1408. The same author, in his Calendar<sup>7</sup> of Lapworth Deeds (pp. 6, 6a, and 7), states that Roger de Brome was witness to a deed about 1280, and that this is the first mention of the family that left its name to Brome Hall. In 1366-7 John Brome and three others received from Philip de Aylesbury and Agnes, his wife, a grant of all their lands in Lapworth, Solihull and elsewhere in Warwickshire, no doubt in trust.<sup>8</sup> The Brome Arms were in the

<sup>1</sup>Id., 95, 97.

<sup>2</sup>Name changed from Croxon. (Norris, 82, 140.)

<sup>3</sup>History of Warwick & Leamington (1815), 367-370; Smith's "History of the County of Warwick" (1830), 374 & 375; Hannett's "Forest of Arden" (1863), 14, 149-157; Niven's "Illustrations of old Warwickshire Houses" (1878), 7 & 8; Norris's Baddesley Clinton; Burgess's "Historic Warwickshire," (2d Ed. 1893), 64-68; 2 Latham's "In English Homes" (2d Ed. 1908), 151-162; Tristram's "Moated Houses" (1910), 190; and 19 "House and Garden" (New York, 1911), 348 and 349, contain descriptions and illustrations of Baddesley Clinton Hall. Hannett and Norris also describe and illustrate the parish church.

<sup>4</sup>Burke's Commoners (1838), 605, erroneously no doubt, connects this family with the Bromes of Kent, who were sprung from Shropshire and are claimed to be of Norman origin.

<sup>5</sup>Norris, 20; Warwickshire Antiquarian Magazine, part IV., 179; History of Warwickshire and its People, by Thomas Kemp (1905), 15-18, 214.

<sup>6</sup>Memorials of a Warwickshire Parish (1904), by Rev. Robert Hudson.

<sup>7</sup>Probably the same person.

<sup>8</sup>MS in Birmingham Free Library.

<sup>9</sup>3 An. Deeds, 62.

Lapworth Church<sup>u</sup> and in the windows of the Knowle Chapel.<sup>v</sup> In Hannett's<sup>w</sup> time there was a farmhouse called Brome Hall, or Brome's Place, near Lapworth and presumably in that parish. "That a considerable mansion, surrounded by a moat, stood here in ancient times, is indicated by the remains of fish ponds of three falls and pleasure grounds around." He considers that this was the seat of the Bromes before John Brome acquired Baddesley Clinton, but while John Brome resided there about and prior to 1400, he was probably not the ancestor (though of the same family) of the Warwick and Baddesley Bromes. A window in Lapworth Church was called Brome Hall window.<sup>x</sup> Dugdale,<sup>y</sup> under Baddesley Clinton, says: "Of this John Brome the Lawyer, who had first to do here, I find, that he did descend from a Familie of that name, which for several Descents were Tanners, and resided in that suburb of Warwick, South of the Bridge; the House still retaining the name of Brome's place: and that Robert, his grandfather, was a Lawyer, as also Steward of the Courts to Thomas de Beauchamp Earl of Warwick, for his lands in this Countie: and that John, his Father, served in the Parliament of 8 H. 4. [1406-7] as one of the Burgesses for the town of Warwick; and Likewise that they were owners of Brome Hall, or Brome's Place in Lapworth, whence 'tis believed they originally came. Which John, before he so acquired Catesbye's title to this Lordship, had certain lands within the precincts thereof, in right of his mother (scil. Joane daughter and heir unto Thomas Rodie) and for a great part of King Henry the sixt's reign, bore much sway in these parts, being under Treasurer in the Exchequer: but in your publique Records his name is mistaken, and written Brown, as appeareth in the Commission for assessing of a subsidie in 14 H. 6 [1435-6] and for treating with the people about a Loan, of money to the King. From 30 H. 6. [1451] till the end of that King's reign I find him in Commission for conservation of the Peace in this Countie; and in 38 H. 6. [1459-60] one of the Commissioners of Array: howbeit, after the beginning of E. 4 [1461] reign, he was set side as to any

<sup>u</sup>2 Dugdale, 791.

<sup>v</sup>Id. 961.

<sup>w</sup>Forest of Arden, 109.

<sup>x</sup>Id. 138-141.

<sup>y</sup>V. 2, pp. 970-2.

publique employment, and at length had the hard fate to be slain by John Herthill Steward to Rich. Nevill, the great Earl of Warwick; who sending for him out of the White Friars church in London, where he was then at Mass, upon some words which hapned betwixt them, kil'd him in the Porch, the occasion of their quarrell, being (in short) this. Herthill, having mortgaged the Mannour of Woodlow to this John, would have redeemed it again for the money borrowed; but Brome, lying upon advantage, resolved to keep the land: whereupon, growing into height of words in disputing the business, Herthill mortally wounded him. Before he departed the world, having time to make his Will, he used this expression, scil. that he forgave his son Thomas, who smiled when he saw him run through by Herthill in the White Friars Church-Porch. In which Church (for there he was buried) he had this epitaph upon his tombe-stone.

'Nobilis & docti sic Regni jure periti,  
 Subjicit ut Pulvis Brome corpus cerne Johannis:  
 Ingenii natus testis Warwic comitatus,  
 Hujus in Ecclesia facta qui Corruit ense;  
 Pravorum manibus sub Missæ tempore cæsus,  
 Sarcophago Nonis sepelitur mensis<sup>a</sup> Novembris,  
 Sexaginta Centum quarter octo jungito Mille,  
 Alme pater requiem sibi præstat habere perennem.'<sup>a</sup>

The following, though the names of the earlier ones are spelled differently,<sup>b</sup> were with little doubt Bromes who were members of Parliament for the Borough of Warwick: William

<sup>a</sup>Corrected from Norris, 23.

<sup>a</sup>In English: "Lo! Here lies as dust the body of John Brome, a noble and learned man, skilled in the law of the Realm, a child of genius, witness the County of Warwick, who fell by the sword in this church, slain at the time of the mass by the hands of wicked men. He was buried in the tomb November 5, 1468. Kindly father, it is better for him to have eternal rest." The Latin is very irregular, especially in the fourth line, and difficult to translate, but the above gives the sense correctly. The White Friars (or Carmelites) priory or church was founded in 1241 and stood on the southside of Fleet Street east of the Temple in the ward of Farringdon Extra (or Without). It was twice rebuilt and was surrendered to the King Nov. 10, 1538. Before 1600 the site was built over. It is possible that John Brome had repaired the church and that the word "facta" in the fourth line of the epitaph refers to that act. (Stow's Survey of London, edition by Henry Morley, 364 and 365; Dugdale's Monasticon Anglicanum, edited by John Cayley, vol. 6, pt. III, 1572.)

<sup>b</sup>For the erroneous spelling of the name, see *supra*, pp. 23, 24.

(Bron), 1357-8; Jeffry (Broun), 1345-6; Robert (Broun), 1366, 1368, and 1384-5; John (Broun) 1397-8 and 1401-2; John (Breme), 1406-7; John Brome, 1415-16, 1420-1, 1425-6, 1427-8, 1430-31 and 1432-3.<sup>e</sup> The Brome arms were:—Sable, on a chevron, argent, three broom sprigs, vert.<sup>d</sup> The Visitation of Warwickshire<sup>e</sup> gives the Brome pedigree (which contains some inaccuracies in the families of Nicholas Brome and his father John), commencing with WILLIAM Brome of Warwickshire, who had a son Denys Brome of Bromes in Lapworth and a son of JOHN of Brome, no doubt in Warwick. This John had ROBERT, who married Parnell, daughter and heiress of Robert Stereton, and had WILLIAM, who married Havis, daughter of William Halwis, and had ROBERT of Brome, who married Margery, daughter of William Brooke. Robert and Margery had ROBERT of Brome in Warwick, a lawyer, who married the daughter and heiress of William Stonley, and is the first of the family named by Dugdale. He is first mentioned in the records in 1396-7. He had two sons JOHN and William of Halton, Oxfordshire. The following is the Dugdale<sup>f</sup> Pedigree:

1 JOHN BROME of Warwick, married Johanna, daughter and heiress of Thomas Rody of Baddesley Clinton, and he thus came into possession of lands there formerly held by her grandfather William Rody, which he is recorded as holding as early as Dec. 6, 1434. In 1406 he was one of the members of Parliament for the Borough of Warwick.<sup>g</sup> In 1419 John Brome of Warwick released to John de Catesby, of Ashby St. Ledgers, Northamptonshire, his right in a moiety of Lapworth manor.<sup>h</sup>

*Children:*<sup>i</sup>

2 JOHN.

WILLIAM, m. ——— and had Robert.<sup>j</sup>

Perhaps others.

<sup>e</sup> Dugdale, 1146, 1147.

<sup>d</sup> Norris, 53; 12 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 96.

<sup>e</sup> 12 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 97.

<sup>f</sup> Vol. 2, pp. 970-972.

<sup>g</sup> Norris, 17, 20, 21; Warwickshire Antiquarian Magazine, part IV., 179.

<sup>h</sup> An. Deeds, 36.

<sup>i</sup> Norris, 20, 22.

<sup>j</sup> An. Deeds, 73.

2 JOHN BROME, a lawyer, married Beatrice Shirley, daughter of Sir Ralph Shirley, of Easington.<sup>k</sup> In 1439 he became possessed of the manor of Baddesley Clinton, and in 1440 a claim to the advowson of the church there was released to him.<sup>l</sup> As early as Dec. 6, 1434, he is recorded as holding lands there, and from about 1437 he was recognized as the lord of the manor, but whether he ever resided at Baddesley Clinton Hall, or continued to reside at Bromesplace is uncertain.<sup>m</sup> This is the view of Norris, but as he is styled of Warwick in 1436 and of Baddesley Clinton in 1454-5 and after, it seems that he must have resided in Baddesley for at least 30 or 40 years. John Brome of Warwick, the younger, held a tenement in Henley in Arden in 1426-7, when he granted it to John Catesby, Esq.<sup>n</sup> In 1428 he had some right to a moiety in the manor of Lapworth, which he then released to John de Catesby.<sup>o</sup> Jan. 13, 1428-9, he bought the estate of Woodlow near Warwick.<sup>p</sup> April 27, 1436, Thomas Cokkes (one of the feoffees of John some time Duke of Bedford) demised to John Brome of Warwick, the younger, and Ralph, Lord of Cromwell, all his lands in Lapworth, etc., formerly belonging to John Brome of Lapworth.<sup>q</sup> There had been a John Brome of Lapworth (doubtless a relative of John Brome of Warwick), who died before Dec. 10, 1410,<sup>r</sup> when his daughter and heiress, Elizabeth, and her husband, Thomas Audeley, conveyed his lands and tenements to Robert Waturton and others.<sup>s</sup> Paulinus Brome had held land in Lapworth which he had conveyed about 1315.<sup>t</sup> John Brome of Lapworth and Margaret, his wife, granted all their lands there March 24, 9 H. 4 (1408-9).<sup>u</sup> In 15 Henry 6 (1436-7) Ralph Lord of Cromwell, Knight, released to John Brome of Warwick, the younger, all his right in the lands, rents, etc., in Lapworth, Kingswood,

<sup>k</sup>Norris, 22.

<sup>l</sup>Id. 18, 19, 22.

<sup>m</sup>Id. 17, 20.

<sup>n</sup>4 An. Deeds, 117, 178; 3 id. 81.

<sup>o</sup>4 Id. 36.

<sup>p</sup>Norris, 22; 1 Dugdale, 469.

<sup>q</sup>3 An. Deeds, 72; 5 id. 29.

<sup>r</sup>He had granted land there in 1398 and 1399 (3 id. 45, 49.)

<sup>s</sup>Id. 77.

<sup>t</sup>4 id. 259.

<sup>u</sup>3 id. 49.

Packwood and elsewhere which had been demised to said Ralph and John by Thomas Cokkes by deed dated 27 April, 1436.<sup>o</sup> In 1437 John Brome, the younger, of Warwick, released certain land in Lapworth, etc.<sup>w</sup> The mansion at Lapworth became, or was already, known as Brome Hall.<sup>e</sup> Apr. 8, 1448, John Brome was witness to a deed by Wm. Catesby, Esq., son and heir of John and Margaret Catesby, to Robert Catesby, the elder, Esq., and others.<sup>v</sup> In 1454-5 Thomas Palmer, Esq., delivered to William Catesby, Knight, seven deeds concerning certain lands and tenements in Lapworth, called "Brome's thinge," then occupied by John Brome of Baddesley, to be kept till the claim to said premises of Catesby and Palmer and the latter's wife, Elizabeth, should have been determined.<sup>s</sup> Sept. 29, 1464, John Brome of Baddesley Clinton held land in Leicestershire, which he then demised.<sup>a</sup> June 2, 1467, Richard Waterton, Chaplain, and John Bothe conveyed all their lands and tenements in Lapworth, Kingswood and Henley, formerly belonging to John Brome of Lapworth, to John Brome alias Broun, of Baddesley, and Beatrice, his wife, for their lives, with remainder in tail to Thomas Brome, Nicholas Brome, and John Brome, and to Elizabeth, Agnes and Jocosa, the children of the grantees, to Robert Brome, son of William Brome, and to Richard Hall, and to the King in fee.<sup>b</sup> May 6, 1468, John Brome conveyed his estates in trust to Thomas Burdet and others, who on Nov. 2, 1469, conveyed the manor of Woodlow and more than 20 tenements and parcels of land in Warwick to his eldest son, Thomas Brome, and his heirs, with remainder to his second son, Nicholas Brome.<sup>c</sup> John Brome was assassinated about Nov. 5, 1468.<sup>d</sup> An inquisition post mortem was held upon the estate of John Brome, of Baddesley Clinton, Sept. 7, 1486. The report of the jury was that he was seised in his demesne as of fee of four messuages with 300 acres of land,

<sup>o</sup>Id. 46.

<sup>w</sup>Id. 46.

<sup>e</sup>Norris, 21.

<sup>v</sup>4 An. Deeds, 548.

<sup>s</sup>Id. 74.

<sup>a</sup>1 id. 160.

<sup>b</sup>3 id. 73.

<sup>c</sup>Norris, 23, 24.

<sup>d</sup>Id. 22, 23. This event and the offices held by him appear at pp. *supra*, 74, 75.

and also of 200 acres of pasture, 40 of meadow and 100 of wood in Lapworth, called Bromes lands; that Nicholas Brome was his son and heir; that William Catesby, Esq., had dispossessed him of his said lands and was found guilty of treason; and that the lands were at the time of the inquisition in the hands of Nicholas Brome.<sup>6</sup> In January, 1473-4, Beatrice Brome, by agreement with her son Nicholas, became possessed of a life estate in the manor of Baddesley Clinton, which was to revert to him on her death. Feb. 10, 1474-5, after his marriage, she conveyed the manor to him for an annual rent of £20. How long she had resided there and where she resided thereafter are not known.<sup>7</sup> Beatrice, the widow of John Brome, died July 10, 1483, and was buried in the Chancel of Baddesley Clinton Church. Upon a raised monument there was the following Latin epitaph, now gone, but preserved by Dugdale (v. 2, p. 974): "Hic jacet Beatrix Brome, vidua, filia Radulfi Shirley, militis, quondam uxor Johannis Brome de Badsley-Clinton armigeri; que obiit X<sup>o</sup> die mensis Julii anno Domini MCCCCLXXXIII, cujus anime propitiatur Deus. Amen."<sup>8</sup>

#### *Children.<sup>3</sup>*

THOMAS, who obtained the manor of Woodlow and various lands in Warwick in 1469, m. Jane (or Joan) Middelmore, of Edgbaston, and died before his father's inquisition, without issue. The grant was to him and his heirs, with remainder to his brother Nicholas.

#### 3 NICHOLAS.

JOHN, who became possessed of Packington Parva. He died Dec. 29, 1512. He had a wife, Elizabeth, son and heir Eustace, son Nicholas and daughters.<sup>4</sup>

ELIZABETH.<sup>5</sup>

AGNES.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>6</sup>Chancery inquisitions P. M., 2 Henry VII, vol. 23, membrane 48 V. O., Pub. Rec. Office, London.

<sup>7</sup>Norris, 25, 26.

<sup>8</sup>See also Norris, 48. This epitaph in English reads thus: "Here lies Beatrice Brome, a widow, daughter of Ralph Shirley, Knight, formerly wife of John Brome, Esq., of Baddesley Clinton, who died July 10, 1483. May God have mercy on her soul. Amen."

<sup>3</sup>Norris, 23, 24.

<sup>4</sup>His inquisition Post Mortem May 9, 1513. (Exch. Inq. 4-5 H'y VIII, File 1120, No. 8).

<sup>5</sup>3 An. Deeds, 73.



JOCOSA, who became prioress of the Abbey of Wroxall and died June 21, 1528. She was prioress apparently from 1507, resigned in 1524 and was succeeded by Agnes Little, the choice of whom was confirmed Nov. 20, 1525. She wrote a letter as prioress Sept. 28, 1515, and was prioress on the Monday before the feast of St. Michael, 1524, which feast occurred on Sept. 29. Upon her resignation provision was made for "Jocosa Brome to have a chamber within the precinct of the said priory, utensils and food for one woman, and one boy, and her own table with the prioress, also a yearly pension of £3." She was buried in the abbey. In the church upon a gravestone of marble was this inscription: "Domina Jocosa Brome filia Johannis Brome et Priorissa de Wroxhall, obiit XXI Junii anno MV<sup>c</sup>XXVIII."<sup>k</sup>

ISABELLA, who married, 1st, Philip Purefey,<sup>l</sup> Esq., of Shirford,<sup>m</sup> and after his death in 1466, 2d, John Denton, by whom she had a daughter, who married Sir Edward Greville, Knight.

3 NICHOLAS BROME, Esquire, born about 1450, married 1st between Sept. 20, 1473 (date of marriage settlement), and Nov. 1, 1473 (limit fixed in the settlement for the marriage), Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Renfred (or Rawfre) Arundell, of Egloshayle, Cornwall, and widow of W. Whittington, of Pauntley, Gloucestershire;<sup>n</sup> 2d before Jan., 1506-7,<sup>o</sup> Katherine Lampeck; and 3d Lettice, daughter of Nicholas Catesby, of Newn-

<sup>k</sup>Records of Wroxall Abbey, XXI-XXIII, LVI, 92, 93, 99; 2 Dugdale, 649, 650. The inscription in English is: "Madam Jocosa Brome, daughter of John Brome and Prioress of Wroxall, died June 21, 1528."

<sup>l</sup>He was buried in the chancel of Baddesley Clinton Church. (Norris, 49. At p. 24, he erroneously says in 1468.) See also 2 Dugdale, 974.

<sup>m</sup>An old manor in Warwickshire (Dugdale).

<sup>n</sup>Nicholas Brome was probably her fourth husband, Edward Stradling her first, William Ligon her second and Whittington her third. The settlement was between Master John Arundel, clerk, and William Ligon, of one part, and Beatrice Brome and Nicholas, her son, of the other. John Arundel was the brother of Elizabeth. He became bishop of Coventry and Lichfield in 1496 and of Exeter in 1502. William Ligon was probably her son by her second husband. (Norris, 25, 26 with note, 51). Hamper also states that Elizabeth was a widow Whittington. See also a confused account of the Arundell family from a MS of about 1505, in 1 Collectanea Topographica et Genealogica, 306, 307 and 409.

<sup>o</sup>Norris, 27, 57.

ham, Northamptonshire.<sup>9</sup> The Visitation of Warwickshire<sup>10</sup> gives Lettice as the 2d wife and presents no 3d. Dugdale, however, on the authority of Henry Ferrers, who was 18 years old on the death of Ralph Brome, son of Nicholas, and must have known and conversed with him, gives the following inscription as in the church in the time of Ferrers: "Under another (stone), near thereto (the door), lyeth Edward Brome, son of the said Nicholas, by Katherine Lampeck, his second wife; which Edward married Margery, the daughter to John Beaufo, of Emscote, in this county, Esquire, and died Anno 1531, 23 H. 8." Katherine, wife of Nicholas, was living as late as January, 1506-7, when she was one of the witnesses to his grant of the manor of Baddesley Clinton and certain lands in Warwick and elsewhere to the use of Sir Edward Ferrers and Constance, his wife.<sup>11</sup> Dugdale,<sup>12</sup> in his article on Baddesley Clinton, speaking first of John Brome, says: "By Beatrice, his wife, daughter to Sir Raphe Shirley, Knight, he left issue divers children; of which Nicholas succeeded him, as Lord of this Mannour; who from 3 H. 7 till 9 H. 8<sup>13</sup> was Justice of the Peace in this Shire; as also for divers years a Commissioner for the Goal-deliverie at Warwick, and of the Array; and in 20 H. 8<sup>14</sup> Sheriff of this County and Leicestershire. This Nicholas, resenting the death of his Father very much, about three years after, way-layd the before mentioned John Herthill in Long-bridgfield,<sup>15</sup> in his passage towards Barford to keep the Earl

<sup>9</sup>Dugdale, vol. II, 970-974.

<sup>10</sup>29 Harl Soc. Pubs., 97.

<sup>11</sup>Norris, 97, 57 n. As appears by the suit of Middlemore against Brome (*infra*, p. 85), Jane Mitton died in the lifetime of Katharine Brome. The date of Mrs. Mitton's death is uncertain. In the 1623 Visitation of Shropshire (29 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 360) she is once said to have died in 1465 and in another place in 1475. Both these dates are erroneous. Phillimore (*The Family of Middlemore*, 1900, by W. P. W. Phillimore and W. F. Carter) says she probably married Mitton in 1496 and died in 1515 or 1525 (pp. 29-41). As the suit shows that she died in the lifetime of Nicholas Brome, she could not have died after 1516. She may have died as late as 1515, and so Katherine Brome may have been living then. Phillimore cites a table following page 164 of Sampson Erdeswicke's Survey of Staffordshire, written before 1600 and printed in 1844.

<sup>12</sup>v. 2, p. 972.

<sup>13</sup>1487 till 1517, but should be 8 H. 8 (1516).

<sup>14</sup>This is an error. It should be 20 H. 7, which would be 1504-5, (2 Dugdale, 1151).

<sup>15</sup>In Warwick (Kemp's Hist. of Warwick, 18).

of Warwick's Court; and there after a short encounter, slew him," whereupon Elizabeth, Herthill's widow, began to stir against him, by way of Appeal, for killing her husband: but by mediation of friends, Arbitrators were chosen to accord the busines, who awarded that she should release unto the same Nicholas all Actions personall, and Appeales, and that he the said Nich. should pay C<sup>li</sup>. sterling in S. Maries Church at Warwick, for the maintenance of a Priest, for one whole year, to sing Masse and pray for the souls, of John Brome and John Herthill, so slain as hath been expressed, she the said Eliz. finding to the Priest, Bread, Wine, and Wax, as oft as he should so say Mass: And moreover that the same Nich. should at his own proper costs, by the space of two years, find a Priest to sing Masse, in the Church of Badsley-Clinton, for the souls above said: which Award bears date at Coventre 18<sup>o</sup> Martii 12 E. 4 [1472-3]. Of this Nich. I have further, that coming on a time into his Parlour here at Badsley, he found the Parish-Priest chocking his wife under the chin, whereat he was so enraged that he presently kil'd him; For which offence, obtaining the King's Pardon, and the Popes, he was enjoind to do something towards the expiation thereof; whereupon he new built the Towre-steeple here at Badsley, from the ground, and bought three Bells for it; and raised the body of the Church ten foot higher: all which was exprest in his Epitaph, now torn away: And likewise built the Steeple of Packwood; in which Church windows was this Inscription, *Orate pro anima Nicholai Brome qui Campanile de Packwood*

---

<sup>o</sup>In wreaking private vengeance, Nicholas Brome did nothing contrary to the habits of the time. During the Anglo-Saxon period and for a century or more under the Normans, private vengeance was recognized as a legal right, and the injury done by a homicide could be compounded by payment of money (*wergild*). Human life had not the same sacredness as in modern England or the eastern United States. From 1337 to 1453 the "Hundred Years' War" with France raged and from 1455 to 1485 the "Wars of the Roses" followed, "marked by a ferocity and brutality which are practically unknown in the history of English wars before and since." At the close of the "Hundred Years' War" "many thousands of ruffians, whose occupation had gone, had been let loose in England." (*Encyclopaedia Britannica*, vol. 23, p. 735.) Trevelyan (*Garibaldi's Defense of the Roman Republic*, 82) says that about 1630 "the 'killing affray' was only just in process of dying out." Herthill, who slew John Brome, was steward to the powerful Earl of Warwick, known as the "Kingmaker," and could rely on his protection. It was after the Earl's death in 1471 that Nicholas Brome ventured to attack Herthill.

feri fecit."<sup>a</sup> In 1503 he was commissioner for Warwickshire for the levying of a tax.<sup>b</sup> Jan. 16, 1497-8, he bought Kingswood, an estate on the border of Baddesley Clinton, partly in Lapworth and partly in Rowington parish. It came into the possession of his daughter, Isabella Marrow.<sup>c</sup> John Hugford, Esq., whose inquisition post mortem was held Aug. 10, 1486, held land in Baddesley Clinton of Nicholas Brome, Esq., by knight service.<sup>d</sup> Nov. 29, 1478, Nicholas Brome, Esq., appointed William Foster parson of the church, who resigned.<sup>e</sup> The bishop, through lapse, appointed Alex. Awen May 23, 1493. Nov. 14, 1499, Nicholas Brome appointed William Snelston, who was removed and he then appointed Robert Banke Oct. 8, 1501, who continued for some years, perhaps till 1534, when Sir Edward Ferrers appointed Thomas Jackson.<sup>f</sup> In the south window of the chapel of the Guild of Knowle were the arms of Nicholas Brome and the words: *Orate pro animabus Nicholai Brome ar: et Elizabethe uxoris eius.*<sup>g</sup> In Baddesley Clinton "Under a large marble lying within the Church dore, at the very entrance, whereupon hath been a faire portraiture in brasse, of a man in armour, lyeth buried *Nicholas Brome* sometime lord of this Mannour. And under the next stone, lyeth *Elisabeth*, one of his daughters, wife to *Thomas Hawe* of Solihull."<sup>h</sup> In the lower part of the east window of the Chancel<sup>i</sup> "is the picture of the same Sir Edward [Ferrers], and the Lady Constance his wife, with Nicholas Brome Esquire her Father, all kneeling in their surcoats of Armes, before a Crucifix; the scroul from the lips of the said Sir Edward, having this written therein, scil. *Amor meus Crucifixus est.*"<sup>j</sup> In the same window towards the bottom is this inscription of later

<sup>a</sup>Pray for the soul of Nicholas Brome, who caused the bell-tower of Packwood to be built.

<sup>b</sup>6 Rolls of Parliament, 541.

<sup>c</sup>2 Dugdale, 793; Norris, 28, 32. Dugdale says it went to Ferrers.

<sup>d</sup>Cal. of Inqs., H. 7, v. 1, p. 54.

<sup>e</sup>2 Dugdale, 973.

<sup>f</sup>Id. and Norris, 57. The lapse was doubtless owing to Nicholas Brome's being out of relations with the Church for killing the priest until he had received the Pope's pardon about 1496 (Norris, 46).

<sup>g</sup>2 Dugdale, 959, 961. In English the words are: Pray for the souls of Nicholas Brome, Esq., and Elizabeth his wife.

<sup>h</sup>Id. 974; Norris, 49.

<sup>i</sup>2 Dugdale, 973; Norris, 51.

<sup>j</sup>My love was crucified.

date: "Nicholas Brome, Esquier, Lord and owner of Badsley married Elizabeth daughter of Sir Rawfre Arundell of Eggeshole in the Countie of Cornwall Knight, Anno Dom. 1473. and died the Xth of October 1517. leaving issue Isabell and Constance, his two daughters, and lieth buried at this Church-dore."<sup>a</sup> In 1465-6 John Brome, of Baddesley, and Sir William Catesby, Knight, had an arbitration in London over certain Lapworth lands. John Brome, of Lapworth, former owner, had sold them to Dame Rose Mountford and others, but Brome of Baddesley showed a deed of reconveyance executed in 1406-7.<sup>1</sup> This arbitration evidently fell through, for a new agreement was made the following year, John Brome, of Baddesley Clinton, the elder, giving a bond, Sept. 17, 1467, to William Catesby, Knight, to accept the award of arbitrators touching the title of lands in Lapworth late belonging to John Brome of that place, in dispute between Catesby and himself, and Catesby giving a counterbond to Brome.<sup>1</sup> This arbitration again proved ineffective, for, Jan. 28, 1496-7, Nicholas Brome, Esq., son and heir of John Brome, gave a bond to George Catesby, Esq., son and heir of William Catesby, Esq., to abide the award of arbitrators as to the title to lands in Lapworth formerly belonging to John Brome of that place. This bond was executed by Thomas Marrow by authority of Brome.<sup>2</sup> In the suit of Nicholas Brome, Esquire, against George Catesby, Esquire, ascribed to the period between 1493 and 1500, Brome alleges that the manor of Brome had continued in the possession of the ancestors of his father, John, as owners for over 200 years and that the said John and Beatrice, his wife, had for 30 years peacefully taken the issues and profits of said manor and the appurtenances, and that he, Nicholas, had taken them since their death, but that several deeds, etc., relating to the manor had got into the possession of Catesby, who kept them.<sup>1</sup> At length the controversy was settled by the sale of Brome's rights to Catesby. July 10, 1501, Nicholas Brome, Esq., acknowledged the receipt of £56

<sup>a</sup>2 Dugdale, 973; Norris, 51, 52.

<sup>1</sup>3 An. Deeds, 258; 4 id. 383.

<sup>1</sup>4 id. 304, 441.

<sup>2</sup>Id. 462.

<sup>1</sup>Early Chancery Proceedings, vol. III, Bundle 185, No. 64, Public Record Office, London.

from George Catesby, Esq., for his interest in lands and tenements in Lapworth and Packwood, called the manor of Bromon, otherwise Bromes Manor.<sup>m</sup> In the suit of Nicholas Brome, Esquire, against John Mitton and Johan (Jane), his wife, formerly wife of Thomas, brother of Nicholas, ascribed to the period between 1486 and 1498, he claims rent for the manor of Woodlow.<sup>n</sup> In the suit of Dame Margery Middlemore, widow, against Nicholas Brome, ascribed to the period between 1504 and 1515, it is alleged that Dame Jane Mytton (Mitton), widow, by her will made Mrs. Middlemore and Kathrine Brome, wife of Nicholas Brome, her executrices, and that a controversy about money matters had arisen in connection with the will.<sup>o</sup> Dame Mitton was the widow of John Mitton and had been widow of Thomas Brome, brother of Nicholas. In the suit of Nicholas Brome, Esquire, against John Middlemore, ascribed to the period between 1504 and 1515, he complains of the detention of deeds relating to the manor of Woodlow.<sup>p</sup> Nicholas Brome died Oct. 10, 1516. An inquisition post mortem on the estate of Nicholas Brome, Esq., was held at Warwick May 31, 1517,<sup>q</sup> before Thomas Purefey, Esq., escheator for the county, and a jury. The jury reported that Robert Throckmorton, Robert Brudnett, Edward Belknap and ten others were seised of the manor of Baddesley Clinton and of the advowson of the Church there and of seven acres of meadow, 28 acres of pasture and four acres of woodland there, in their demesne as of fee, to the use of said Nicholas Brome and his heirs, and that said Brome and the said parties at his request conveyed the same to John Ferrers, Knight, and others, to hold to the use of said Nicholas Brome during his life and

<sup>m</sup>3 An. Deeds, 48.

<sup>n</sup>Early Chancery Proceedings, vol. III, Bundle 85. No. 57, Public Record Office, London.

<sup>o</sup>Early Chancery Proceedings, vol. IV, Bundle 339, No. 57, Public Record Office, London.

<sup>p</sup>Early Chancery Proceedings, vol. IV, Bundle 380, No. 29, Public Record Office, London.

<sup>q</sup>The report is dated at the end May 27 and at the beginning May 31. The former may be the date of the hearing and the latter the date of the drawing up of the formal report. The year should be 1517, although Norris gives it as 1518 (p. 28). The inquisition was taken in the ninth year of the reign of Henry the Eighth, whose reign began Apr. 22, 1509. Therefore May of the first year of his reign was May, 1509, May of the second year was 1510, and so on till we come to May of the ninth year, which was in 1517.

after his decease to the use of the heirs of the body of the said Nicholas and Elizabeth, late his wife, lawfully begotten, and in default of such heirs to the right heirs of said Nicholas. That thereafter said John Ferrers died, but his surviving co-grantees remained seised of the said premises at the time of the death of Nicholas Brome and of the inquisition. That said manor, advowson and other premises were held of Thomas Lord of Clinton by fealty and the rent of one penny a year if demanded, and were worth at the last appraisal £20 per annum. That Lady Constance Ferrers and Dorothy Marrow were the lawful heirs of the body of said Nicholas and Elizabeth Brome, Constance being the daughter and Dorothy the granddaughter (daughter of Isabell Marrow, who was the daughter of Nicholas and Elizabeth Brome). That Constance was 33 years and Dorothy 20 years old. That said Nicholas Brome a little before his death, being weak in body, but of sound memory, made his last will and testament, which contained these words: "I will that all those psons that stand enfeofed in the maner of Baddesley Clynton stand feoffed and seasid unto thuse of Sir Edward fferers Knyght and Dame Constance his wif and to their heires for ever if the said Edward or his assignez gif and make sure to the said Dorethe Marrowe or to hir heirez for ever in lande rente or tente to the yearly value of xij<sup>li</sup>." Further the jury declared that Richard Higham, Thomas Frowyk, Robert Throckmorton and others were seised of the manor of Woodlow with a hundred acres of land, and of three hundred acres of pasture, 11 acres of meadow, and 20 acres of woodland in Woodlow, and of a large quantity of land, with messuages, etc. in Over Woodcote,<sup>r</sup> Nether Woodcote,<sup>r</sup> Norton,<sup>s</sup> Offchurch<sup>t</sup> and Eathorpe<sup>u</sup> in Warwickshire, in their demesne as of fee, to the use of said Nicholas and his heirs. That thereafter some of said parties died, but the others remained seised at the time of the death of Nicholas Brome and of the inquisition, subject to an agreement between the said

<sup>r</sup>Woodcote was in Knightlow Hundred, which contains also Coventry (1 Dugdale, 271).

<sup>s</sup>Lower Norton is a hamlet in Budbrooke parish near Warwick (Bartholomew's Gazetteer; 2 Dugdale, 660).

<sup>t</sup>Offchurch is a parish near Warwick (Bartholomew; 1 Dugdale, 361).

<sup>u</sup>Eathorpe is a township in Wappenbury parish, S. Warwickshire (Bartholomew; 1 Dugdale, 296).

Nicholas Brome of the first part, Henry Ferrers, Knight, and Edward Ferrers, Knight, son and heir of Henry, of the second part, and Thomas Marrow of the third part, upon the marriage of said Edward Ferrers and Lady Constance, one of the daughters of said Nicholas Brome, which, among other things, provided: "Yt is also covenanted and agreed betwene all and ev'y of the said parties that if the said Nicholas Brome die without heir male of his body lawfully begotten that then the said Richard Higham and Thomas Frowik S'iannte at the lawe and all their cofeoffees aforesaid shall stand seasid of the maners of Wodlowe and Overwodcott and Netherwodcot with thapp-tenne and of a ten't with c'teyn medows lieng thereto in Eythorp whiche oon William Westley now occupieth and of xiiij<sup>d</sup> of chief rent of the gilde of Warrewyk to thuse of the said Constance the youngest daughter of the said Nicholas and the heires of hir bodie begoten And for defaute of suche issue to thuse of said the Isabell and the heires of hir bodie lawfully begoten And for defaute of suche issue to the right heires of the said Nicholas for ev'more." That later Nicholas Brome in his said will declared his purpose respecting said premises in the following words: "I will that thoes psons that stond feofid in my maners of Wodlowe Overwodcott and Netherwodcott and all thoes psons that stondith enfeofed in all such landys as I purchasid in Norton Offchurche Eythrop' within the Countie of Warr' stand seasid in all those maners landys and tente duryng the nonage of Edward my son unto thuse of myn executors that they may take the pfitts therof toward the mariage of my thre daughters over the reasonable exhibicions<sup>e</sup> of my children in the meane tyme to be had of the said landys and if my said son die afore thage of xxj yeres than I will my said feoffees stand seasid unto suche use and intent as aforeseid unto the tyme my son Rauff cum to his full age of xxj yeres And then to remayne unto hym and to his heires males of his body lawfully begoten." The jury further said that Edward Grevell, Knight, Thomas Denton, Esq., and Robert Bankes, Clergyman, were at the time of the death of Nicholas Brome and of the inquisition seised in their demesne as of fee, among other things, of a messuage and four acres of pasture in Solihull and

<sup>e</sup>Allowances for living expenses.



of two acres of pasture in Nether Norton, also of a messuage, 30 acres of pasture, four acres of meadow, and one acre of marsh, with their appurtenances, in Lyndon,\* "ad opus et usum" of said Nicholas Brome for his life and after his decease to the use of Elizabeth Brome, one of his daughters, and the heirs of her body lawfully begotten, and if she should die without such heirs, then to the use of Katrine, then wife of said Nicholas, for her life, and after her death to the use of Constance Ferrers, another daughter of the said Nicholas, and her heirs, as more fully appeared by a certain deed in evidence on the inquisition. That the messuage and pasture in Solihull were held of Thomas Duke of Norfolk, by fealty and the rent of two pence, in lieu of all services, and that at the last appraisal they were worth 12 shillings a year. That the pasture in Nether Norton, was held of the Dean and Chapter of the Church of St. Mary in Warwick, but by what service the jury were entirely ignorant, and that the annual value at the last appraisal was two shillings. That the messuage and other premises in Lyndon were held of the Prior<sup>o</sup> of St. John of Jerusalem in England and of the heirs of the Count of Kildare by fealty in lieu of all services, and that the annual value at the last appraisal was 20 shillings. They further found that Nicholas Brome died on the tenth of October last past (1516), and that Edward Brome was his first born son and heir, and was eight years old and over at the time of his father's death.<sup>†</sup>

*Children.<sup>‡</sup>*

*By first wife:*

ISABELLA, m. Thomas Marrow, of London (son of William), in 1491, who became a serjeant at law and died April 5,

---

\*Lindon was a hamlet wholly or partly in Bickenhill parish adjoining or near to Solihull (2 Dugdale, 974, 977).

†This Prior was the head of the Knights Hospitallers in England, whose chief establishment was near Smithfield in the suburbs of London. After the suppression in 1312 of the Knights Templars, the Hospitallers came into possession of their lands. The Templars had had a "preceptory," or branch, at Balsall about 3 m. N. of Baddesley, to which certain lands in the vicinity belonged (2 Dugdale, 962-969).

‡Chancery Inquisitions Post Mortem, Series 2, vol. 32, No. 42, and a better preserved copy, Exchequer Inquisitions Post Mortem, File 1123, No. 7, both on file in the Public Record Office, London.

§Norris, 28.

1505.<sup>a</sup> His wife died before him. He left a daughter, Dorothy, b. about 1497.<sup>b</sup>

CONSTANCE, b. about 1484, m. Sir Edward Ferrers, Knight, of East Peckham, Co. Kent, son of Sir Henry, between Dec. 1, 1497, and the 2d of February following.<sup>c</sup> He d. Aug. 29, 1535;<sup>d</sup> she d. Sept. 30, 1551, leaving issue. She left a will, dated Aug. 26, 1551, and proved in the Prerogative court of Canterbury Oct. 17, 1551.<sup>e</sup>

*By his second wife:*

- 4 ELIZABETH,<sup>f</sup> who m. in 1527 Thomas Hawes of Solihull. EDWARD, b. in 1507 or 1508, who married Margery, daughter of John Beaufo, Esq., of Emscote, Warwickshire, and d. in 1531, without issue.<sup>g</sup>

*By his third wife, probably:*

RALPH (Radolphus, Rauffe), m. 1st Anne, daughter of Reginald Digby, of Coleshill, Esquire, and 2nd a daughter of William Newport. He d. in 1567. His children by his first wife were Reginald, Thomas, Anne, Gertrude • and Catharine, and by his 2nd wife, William and Alice (not named in his will).<sup>h</sup>

<sup>a</sup>Id. 28, 43.

<sup>b</sup>His will dated March 31, 1505, was proved April 10, 1505 (28 Holgrave, P. C. C.). He left 90 pence to the reparation of the Church of our Lady in Baddesley, Warwickshire, and to the ornaments thereof. He owned lands in London, Warwickshire and other counties. He left to his sister a crimson gown that had been his wife's. His daughter married first, Francis Cokeyn of Pooley (a village in the parish of Polesworth, Warwickshire), who was living Jan. 7, 1530-1. They had a son, Sir Thomas Cokeyn. Her first husband having died, she married second in 1540, Sir Humphrey Ferrers of Tamworth Castle. (Norris, 28, 29, 33.) She was buried in Baddesley Clinton Church. (Norris, 49; 2 Dugdale, 973, 974.)

<sup>c</sup>Norris, 28.

<sup>d</sup>He left a will proved Nov. 18, 1535 (see abstract, Norris, 133).

<sup>e</sup>29 Buck; Norris, 28, 30, 50, 52, 137 (abstract of her will).

<sup>f</sup>Norris, 27, 28, 49, 57; 2 Dugdale, 970-974; *supra*, p. 83. The inquisition of Nicholas Brome, (*supra*, p. 87) makes Robert Bankes, clergyman, one of those at its date seised of lands to the use of Nicholas Brome for life and then to the use of his daughter Elizabeth and her issue, and if she died without issue, then to Katherine, the then wife of Nicholas, for her life, and after her death to the use of Constance Ferrers and her heirs. It seems more than probable that he had no other children unprovided for at the time of the grant to Bankes and his associates, which was made after Oct. 8, 1501, when he was appointed to Baddesley Clinton Church, and very likely in January, 1506-7, when Bankes was witness to a grant to Constance and her husband.

<sup>g</sup>Norris, 28, 49; 2 Dugdale, 970-974; *supra*, p. 81.

<sup>h</sup>2 Dugdale, 970-974; 12 Harl. Soc. Pubs., 97; *supra*, p. 44.

Jocosa<sup>4</sup> (Joyce), mentioned in 1551 as unmarried in the will of her sister, Constance Ferrers, who leaves her 20 marks,<sup>7</sup> and in the will of her brother, Rauffe Brome, in 1567.<sup>8</sup>

A DAUGHTER,<sup>1</sup> who was perhaps Dorothy Brome, who joined the Knowle Guild in 1526, and Nov. 21, 1525, had been one of the witnesses of the profession of Agnes Little, the new prioress of Wroxall.<sup>2</sup>

Hamper on Dugdale and Norris<sup>3</sup> both make Lettice Catesby, the 2nd wife, and Catharine Lampeck, the 3rd wife, of Nicholas Brome. But from the inquisition (which Norris had evidently not read) and from Dugdale, it seems clear that Catharine was the 2nd and Lettice the 3rd. If Lettice was in fact the 2nd, she *may* have been the mother of Elizabeth.<sup>4</sup> It is not known who Catharine Lampeck was. There was, however, a family of Lampetts in Warwickshire to which she may have belonged.<sup>5</sup> In the reign of Edward IV. (1461-1483) Nicholas Brome, of Baddesley, and Elizabeth, his wife, were members of the Guild of Knowle, with their children, Johanna, Elizabeth, Johanna,

<sup>4</sup>Norris (p. 53) refers to a female figure in the private chapel in Baddesley Clinton Hall, and says: "There is some probability that this small effigy is a memorial of Joyse (Jocosa), a younger daughter of Nicholas Brome and his wife Elizabeth Arundell." But Norris himself elsewhere, Dugdale, and the inquisition of Nicholas Brome, with the memorials in the Church, all declare that Elizabeth and Constance were the only heirs of Nicholas and Elizabeth.

<sup>5</sup>Norris, 139.

<sup>6</sup>*Supra*, p. 44.

<sup>7</sup>His will (*supra*, p. 87) speaks of three unmarried daughters without naming them.

<sup>8</sup>Records of Wroxall Abbey and Manor, XXII, 93, 223; Register of Guild of Knowle, 256. Jocosa and the unnamed daughter may have been children of the second wife.

<sup>9</sup>Pages 15, 27, 28.

<sup>10</sup>In the text the writer has given heed to the authorities that give Nicholas Brome three wives and make Lettice Catesby one of them, but in reality he very much questions whether Brome ever married her. Her marriage is stated by Dugdale in connection with an alleged controversy over Baddesley Clinton. "Ancient Deeds" do not give evidence of this controversy, but show a controversy between Bromes and Catesbys over Brome Hall in Lapworth. It is noticeable that Ralph Brome has a daughter Catharine, which would have been natural if his mother had been Catharine Lampeck.

<sup>11</sup>The will of Thomas Lampett was proved in P. C. C. May 8, 1501 (22 Moone), and the will of John Lampett July 16, 1502 (9 Blamyr). These were both of Stratford on Avon. John had land in Staffordshire. Neither will names Catharine.

Cecilia, Maria, Anna, Richard, and Isabell (Reg. of Guild of Knowle, 30). The name is here written Browne, but it was undoubtedly Brome and is so regarded by Norris (p. 74). Some of the above eight children may have been Elizabeth's by former husbands. If not, with the exception of Isabell, they died young. Isabell was married in 1491 and must have been born not later than 1477.

## RODY

The Rodys were originally settled in Warwick.<sup>p</sup> The earliest of whom mention has been found was:

- 1 JOHN LE RODY, whose son and heir was
- 2 WILLIAM RODY, of Warwick, who had two sons, John and (3) William.
- 3 WILLIAM RODY (or William de Rody) of Warwick. In 1360 and 1361 he became possessed of 21 acres of land and a messuage with fields and pastures in Baddesley Clinton. He had three sons and one daughter.

### *Children:*

WILLIAM, who came into possession of the Baddesley Clinton property in 1369, with remainder to his brothers and sister and their heirs; d. without issue.

JOHN, d. without issue.

- 4 THOMAS, who had (5) Johanna.  
MARGERIA.

- 5 JOHANNA, who, as heiress of Thomas, came into possession of the Baddesley Clinton property and m. John Brome, of Warwick.

The following, who were members of Parliament for the Borough of Warwick, were no doubt of this family: Michael Rody, 1413-14; Nicholas Rody, 1421-5, 1436-7; John Rody, 1420-2, 1432-3, 1434-5, 1436-7.<sup>q</sup> Dugdale<sup>r</sup> states that Nicholas Rody was secretary of the Earl of Warwick in 1439. The will of this Nicholas, dated in 1458 and proved Oct. 25 of that year, described him as of Warwick and formerly steward of that town. It makes bequests and devises, but names no relatives.<sup>s</sup> The Rody arms were: Gules, a cross moline, voided, between four fishes, hauriant, or,<sup>t</sup>

<sup>p</sup>Norris, 8, 9, 21; 2 Dugdale, 970.

<sup>q</sup>2 Dugdale, 1146, 1147.

<sup>r</sup>Vol. 1, p. 412.

<sup>s</sup>3 An. Deeds, 91.

<sup>t</sup>Norris, 53.

## SHIRLEY\*

Dugdale says that at the time of the Domesday Survey (1086) Nether-Eatendon<sup>o</sup> was held by Henry de Feriers, ancestor of the Earls of Derby, "and of whom did one Saswalo hold it, at which time there was a Church and a Mill; to whose posterity in the male line it hath continued even to this day, being the only place in this County that glories in an uninterrupted succession of its owners for so long a tract of time; and till the reign of King Henry<sup>o</sup> III was their principall seat (though their possessions in other counties were very large) whence also they were denominated; but afterwards fixing at Shirley in Derbyshire, they assumed their sirname of that place, which has ever since been appropriated to this antient Family." The Shirley arms were in the church at Newton.<sup>o</sup> They are: Paly of six, or and azure, a quarter (or canton) ermine. Crest: The head of a Saracen proper couped at the neck, wreathed round the temples, or and azure.<sup>o</sup>

### PEDIGREE

1 SASWALO. Dugdale thinks he may have been a Saxon thane. He gave certain tithes to the monks of Abington, Northamptonshire, and founded the church at Eatington. He owned estates in Northamptonshire, Lincolnshire and Derbyshire as well as Warwickshire. His son Henry was a witness to the foundation charter of Merevale Abbey in King Stephen's time,<sup>o</sup> and a benefactor to the Canons of Kenilworth, to whom he gave the Eatington Church, with all the glebe and tithes

---

\*1 Dugdale, 618-626. The Visitation (in 1619) of Leicestershire, 2 Harl. Soc. Pubs., 25, also gives a Shirley pedigree. I have taken a few items from it, but have followed Dugdale, who is later and gives details and authorities. See also 1 Dugdale, 627, and 2 Dugdale, 1003, 1004.

<sup>o</sup>Now called Eatington, Warwickshire.

<sup>o</sup>1216-1272.

<sup>o</sup>2 Dugdale, 1124-1126.

<sup>o</sup>Burke's General Armory, 923; Norris, 70.

<sup>o</sup>1135-1154.

belonging to it. He died without issue, and Henry, son of his brother Fulcher, succeeded him.

2 **FULCHER**, son of Saswalo. Fulcher's son Henry had a son Fulcher, who was set aside, and this Henry's younger brother Sewall was made his heir. Henry gave land to the monks of Bildwas.

3 **SIR SEWALL**,<sup>a</sup> of Eatington, a knight, son of Fulcher (No. 2), married Matilda Ridel, and in 1192-3 was made heir of his father's and uncle Henry's lands, which comprised nine knight's fees. He released to the Canons of Kenilworth all his interest in the patronage of Eatington Church, and for the health of his soul and the souls of his two wives, gave to those Canons 31 acres of land. To the Canons of Darley in Derbyshire he gave lands and also to the monks of Tutbury in that county. His son,

4 **HENRY**, of Eatington, who attended William Earl Ferrers in the King's army when he sailed into Poitou in 1202-3. In 1205-6 he had livery made to him of the manor of Ednesoure, Derbyshire, of which he seems to have been disseised while on the voyage. He erected an altar dedicated to St. Nicholas in Eatington Church, and gave divers parcels of land to it for the maintenance of a priest "to celebrate divine service thereat, for the health of his own soul, and the soules of his wives, as also of his childrens souls every day except on Thursdays, and the Feast of S. Nicholas, on which day the said Priest was particularly to celebrate to that Saint." He also, in augmentation of the maintenance of the priest, gave the tithe of the toll of his mill in Eatington and an annuity of five shillings, four for the personal use of the priest and one for the lamp in the church. He reserved power to himself and his heirs to present to the chantry whenever the priest should die. His son,

5 **SEWALL**, of Eatington, who married Isabell, daughter and coheirress of Robert Meisnill, confirmed in 1242-3 his father's gift to the chantry and died before 1259-60, leaving his son and heir,

6 **SIR JAMES, KNIGHT**, who married Agnes de Walton, "the first of this family that assumed the surname of Shirley; for

<sup>a</sup>He was called in Latin both Sawaldus and Sewallus.

by that appellation he had Free-warren granted to him in all his demesne, as well at Shirley in Derbyshire 31 H. 3 [1246-7] as in 39 of the same King's reign [1254-5], here at Eatendon in this County." His son and heir,

7 RALPH SHIRLEY, married Margaret, daughter and one of the coheiresses of Walter de Waldeshof, of Boylstone, Derbyshire, cupbearer to King Edward 2.<sup>b</sup> He was sheriff of Nottingham and Derbyshires in 1278-9. In 1280-81 he was presented for not being a knight, though qualified, and was by the King's letters patent respited for five years. In 1293-4 he was one of the commissioners in Warwickshire for assessing and collecting the grant made to the King for his wars. "In 28 E. 1 [1299-1300] he had the custody of the Counties of Salop and Stafford, with the castle of Shrewsbury committed to his charge." In 1300-1301, he had summons, with other great men, to attend the King at Berwick on Tweed, "well appointed with Horse and Armes to march against the Scots." In 1309-10, he was made one of the two justices for the jail delivery at Warwick, and in 1311-12 served for Warwickshire as member in two parliaments. "Being one of the Coroners in this County (an office of great note in those days . . .) he had, through want of health, a discharge from that employment in 6 E. 2 [1312-13], but in 8 E. 2 [1314-15] was Gouvernour of Hores-ton Castle in Derbyshire; and in 16 E. 2 [1322-3] one of the Commissioners in this County for levying a XVth." He died in 1326-7. His son and heir,

8 RALPH SHIRLEY, who 1327-8 was a commissioner for the assessing and collecting of a 15th and a 10th, and in 1328-9 was appointed to assess and collect the scutage then due the King for the Scotch expedition in the first year of his reign. In 1340-41 he was a member of Parliament for Warwickshire. His son,

9 SIR THOMAS SHIRLEY, KNIGHT, who married Isabell, daughter of Ralph Lord Basset,<sup>c</sup> of Drayton. He died before 1362-3. His son,

10 SIR HUGH SHIRLEY, KNIGHT, who married Beatrix, sister and heiress of Sir John de Brews, Knight, of West Newton

<sup>b</sup>His reign was 1307-1327.

<sup>c</sup>The Basset arms were—Or, three piles meeting in base gules, a canton vair (2 Harl. Soc. Pubs., 12, 50).



in Sussex. In the first year of his reign, he was made master of the hawks to King Henry 4.<sup>d</sup> He was killed in 1403 in the battle of Shrewsbury, in which year he had received a grant of the manor of Sheldon.<sup>e</sup> In 1400-1401 he was a justice of the peace in Warwickshire, and in the following year was appointed "one of the Commissioners to enquire of such persons as were disturbers of the Laws and spreaders of false reports." Jan. 16, 1389-90, the last Lord Basset of Drayton, his maternal uncle, entailed on him all his fee-simple lands, provided he should bear the name and arms of Basset. A controversy arose over this grant between him and the Earl of Stafford, which was not ended until Henry 6<sup>f</sup> decided that Hugh's son, Sir Ralph Shirley, Knight, should enjoy them. Hugh was made Chief Warder of Higham-Ferrers Park, Northamptonshire, by John of Gaunt,<sup>g</sup> and in 1398-9 constable of Donington Castle, Leicestershire, by the Duke of Lancaster, who later became Henry 4. His widow in 1421-2 furnished the King with an esquire and 13 archers to serve on horseback with him in the King's wars beyond the seas, for three-fourths of a year. His son and heir,

11 SIR RALPH SHIRLEY, KNIGHT, born about 1390, who married first Jocosa (Joyse), daughter and heiress of Thomas Basset, Esquire, of Brailsford, Derbyshire, and second, Alice, daughter of Sir John Cokain, of Ashborne, Derbyshire, Knight, and "in 3 H. 5 [1415-16] being retained to serve the King then in person with his Army . . . with six men at Armes and XVIII Archers (the famous Battail of Agincourt then hapning;) and the next year following with VIII men at Armes and XVI Archers, was honoured with the dignity of Knight-hood about that time; for in 8 H. 5 [1420-21] being then Shiriff of the Counties of Nottingham and Derby, I find him so stiled." In 1423-4 the feoffees of Ralph Lord Basset, of Drayton, released to him their interest in the manors of Colston-Basset and Ratcliff super Soar in Nottinghamshire, Rakdale, Willows, Ratcliff super Wreak, Barrow super Soar, Dunton and Watton in Leicestershire, and Westhall and Easthall in

<sup>d</sup>His reign was 1399-1413.

<sup>e</sup> Dugdale, 1003-1004.

<sup>f</sup>His reign was 1422-71.

<sup>g</sup>1340-99.

Sheldon in Warwickshire. In 1431-2 he had his residence at Ratcliff super Soar. He was 12 years old in 1402-3. By his first wife he had:

12 BEATRIX, who m. John Brome, of Baddesley Clinton.

RALPH SHIRLEY, Esq., who was thrice married and had issue.

## CATESBY

The Catesbys were a prominent family of Warwickshire and Northamptonshire, being especially interested in Lapworth and Ashby St. Ledgers. William Catesby was sheriff of Warwickshire in 1371-2.<sup>h</sup> He was member of parliament for the county of Warwick in 1339-40, 1353-4 and 1360-61. John Catesby was member of parliament for the county in 1372-3 and in 1392-3. In 1449-50 William Catesby, was member for the county.<sup>i</sup> The Catesby arms with various empalings and quarterings were displayed in Lapworth Church,<sup>j</sup> in Wolfhamcote Church,<sup>k</sup> in Trinity Church<sup>l</sup> (Coventry), in Ladbroke Church,<sup>m</sup> and in Barford Church.<sup>n</sup> The Catesby arms were: Argent, two lions passant in pale sable, crowned or. Different branches of the family had different crests.<sup>o</sup> Dugdale,<sup>p</sup> in his account of Lapworth, gives the history of the Catesbys and says: "I have seen an antient Pedegree, which makes Will. de Catesby (the first that assumed this sirname in E. 1. time,<sup>q</sup> as is there expressed) to be son of John de Esseby, Brother to Will. de Esseby, of Esseby, now commonly called Ashby . . . . in com. Northampt . . . . That they sprung from the Family of Esseby is not improbable, considering . . . that the two lions passant, which for many ages they have born for their Arms, is the same Coat which Esseby gave, by their Seals appeareth. But the antientest Lordship that any of them had in Warwicksh. is that of Lodbroke, which Will. de Catesby obtained in E. 3 time."<sup>r</sup> Bridges

<sup>h</sup>3 Dugdale, 1150.

<sup>i</sup>Id. 1145.

<sup>j</sup>3 Dugdale, 791.

<sup>k</sup>1 id. 306.

<sup>l</sup>Id. 177.

<sup>m</sup>Id. 335.

<sup>n</sup>Dugdale.

<sup>o</sup>Burke's General Armory, 177; 12 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 124; 8 Col. Top. & Gen., 302.

<sup>p</sup>v. 2, p. 791.

<sup>q</sup>1372-1307.

<sup>r</sup>1327-77.

(pp. 17 and 18) shows that several descendants of John and Emma Catesby were buried and had inscriptions in the Church of Ashby St. Ledgers. On p. 18 he says: "At the upper end of both the isles are two places parted off from the rest, which seem to have been antiently appropriated to the use of particular families. In one of them, which was called St. Mary's Chapel, several of the Catesbys were buried, though the Inscriptions on their monuments are now effaced. Amongst the rest, there lay John de Catesby, the first of the family who possessed this Lordship, with Emma, his wife, as may be gathered from two escutcheons remaining over their heads, the one of Lodbroke quartering Catesby, and the other of Catesby impaling Cranford." The pedigree here given is made after comparison with Dugdale (v. 2, pp. 791 and elsewhere), Bridges' Northamptonshire (v. 1, pp. 15-18 and 23), Baker's Northamptonshire (v. 1, pp. 115, 245), Visitations of Northamptonshire (142, 172), Visitation of Warwickshire (12 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 124, 125), vols. 3 and 4 Ancient Deeds, *passim*, and other authorities. The result reached is believed to be accurate. Discrepancies have been adjusted and inaccuracies corrected. It will be noted that 12 Harl. Soc. Pubs. erroneously makes Roger and not Robert heir of Nicholas Catesby, while the Visitations of Northamptonshire (172) erroneously makes Robert Catesby marry the daughter of Sir John Peche, Knight.

The Visitation of Warwickshire<sup>1</sup> gives the early pedigree thus: Philip de Catesby, whose son was William de Catesby, Knight. The latter's son was Simon de Catesby, steward of Randolph Gernon, Earl of Chester and Lord of Coventry, between 1100 and 1154, and the son of this Simon was Randolph de Catesby, steward of Hugo, Earl of Chester and Lord of Coventry, between 1154 and 1189. Then followed Simon de Catesby, who had lands in Coventry, and his son Reginald Catesby and his grandson Simon Catesby, both of Coventry. This is a record of seven generations. The son of the last named Simon was

1 JOHN CATESBY of Flecknoe, who married Isabell, daughter and heiress of Henry of Ladbrooke. His son was

2 WILLIAM CATESBY of Ladbrooke and Coventry, married Joane, daughter and heiress of William Radbourne alias Arden, of Radbourne. His son and heir was

<sup>1</sup>12 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 125.

3 JOHN CATESBY of Ladbroke, who before 1394 married Emma, daughter and heiress of Robert Cranford of Ashby St. Ledgers, Northamptonshire, and widow of John Swinford (who died after 1374). She died before 1417. He is mentioned as early as 1362 and died before 1408.

*Sons:*

WILLIAM, married Alice, daughter of Robert Mexington, and died in 1407-8 without issue.

JOHN, married before 1425 Margaret, daughter and co-heiress of William de Montford of Lapworth. She died before 1455. He is mentioned as early as 1408, and died July 4, 1436. His son, Sir William Catesby, Knight, who died in 1470, married 1st Philippa, daughter and heiress of William de Bishopsdon, Knight, who in 1420-21 received the release of the manor of Lapworth Hall from Thomas Burdet, Knight.<sup>†</sup>

4 ROBERT CATESBY,<sup>‡</sup> married Lettice, daughter of Thomas Thorpe of Newnham, Northamptonshire, and widow of Thomas Newnham. He is mentioned as early as 1405. He died Dec. 14, 1467, and with his wife was buried in the Church of Newnham. Bridges (v. 1, p. 23) gives the inscription in the church as follows:—"Orate pro anima Ricardi Catesby Armigeri, qui obiit XIV die mensis Decembris, anno domini MCCCCLXVII. et Leticiae consortis suae, quae ob . . . quorum animabus propicietur Deus."<sup>§</sup> This a note says was obtained from the Belchier collection and was no longer, about 1720, extant in the Church. There is no doubt but that the name should be "Roberti" and not "Ricardi," although Baker gives the name as Richard on p. 115, and on p. 245, while giving it as Robert, queries whether it should not be Richard. The quotations from Ancient Deeds given under Nicholas Catesby settle the question, not speaking of Dugdale, Norris and the Visitations. The Chancery suit of Robert Catesby, son and heir of Nicholas, son of Robert Catesby, against Gerard Dan and Nich-

<sup>†</sup> An. Deeds, 313.

<sup>‡</sup>Hamper on Dugdale, in the Catesby Genealogy under Lapworth, makes Robert Catesby marry and have Nicholas who sold Baddesley Clinton, and erroneously William, Knight in 1452-53, who died in 1470. See also Norris, 15.

<sup>§</sup>In English: Pray for the souls of Richard [Robert] Catesby, Esq., who died Dec. 14, 1467, and of Lettice his wife, who died . . . and may God have mercy on their souls. The inscription is also given in 1 Baker, 260.

olas Browne (Brome) recites that Nicholas Metley was seised of lands in Warwickshire and Leicestershire, which by his will he directed should be sold and the proceeds employed in works of charity, that his mother, Margaret Metley, and his wife, Johanna, his executrixes, sold them to Robert Catesby, father of Nicholas, who occupied them for 30 years until his death, and then they descended to Nicholas Catesby, his son and heir, that at the time of the suit cousins (probably descendants) of Nicholas Metley claimed the lands, and that Nicholas Brome was guardian of one of them.<sup>60</sup> April 8, 1448, Robert Catesby, the elder, Esq., with others, had received a deed of land from William Catesby, Esq., son and heir of John and Margaret Catesby,<sup>61</sup> and in 1457-8 he and John Wattson received a deed from the same William Catesby of half the manor of Lapworth and other lands.<sup>62</sup> These conveyances were probably to the grantees as trustees. Robert Catesby was one of the executors of Nicholas Metley, Lord of the Manor of Baddesley Clinton, who died Nov. 12, 1437, and in his will directed his manor of Baddesley to be sold. He "is said to have purchased the Manor and to have resided at the Hall till 1460, but it is impossible without further evidence to say who were the residents there for some years after Johanna Burdet vacated it, or whether indeed it ever came legally into the hands of Catesby as one of Metley's executors. The uncertainty concerning the history of Baddesley at this period may perhaps be somewhat explained by the fact that the manor-lands and the Hall or manor-place were undoubtedly for some time separated and held apart from each other. Johanna Burdet gave the Manor to her nephew [Nicholas Metley] in 1434, but retained the Hall as her residence for the term of her life, and since she was living in 1442, it may well be presumed that even if Metley was in a position to dispose of the lands he had no right whatever in the disposition of the Hall. And herein probably lies the key to many apparent discrepancies." John Hugford, steward of Richard Neville, earl of Warwick, had married Margaret, daughter of Nicholas Metley. He is said to have ousted

<sup>60</sup>Early Chancery Proceedings, vol. IV, Bundle 960, No. 1 (ascribed to the year 1502-3), in the Public Record Office, London.

<sup>61</sup>4 An. Deeds, 548.

<sup>62</sup>Hannett, 223.

Catesby in 1460, and entered upon the manor, but his patron was slain in battle in 1471 and Robert Catesby's "heir Nicholas Catesby is said to have obtained possession of Baddesley and resided there till 1496. This is according to the statement of Sir William Dugdale, who had opportunities of perusing documents that are no longer in existence."<sup>a</sup>

*Sons:*

5 NICHOLAS.

WILLIAM, of Oxford, who married and had Elizabeth, who married William Woodhull alias Odell.

5 NICHOLAS CATESBY, who is mentioned in 1458-9 and died between 1498 and 1506. He married and had

ROBERT, *heir*.

Nicholas perhaps. Nicholas the elder is mentioned in 1494.

6 LETTICE, who married Nicholas Brome.<sup>a</sup>

Jan. 15, 1464-5, John Catesby, sergeant at law, Nicholas Catesby and others were grantees of land in Lapworth and Kingswood, and March 17, 1465-6, the granddaughter and heiress of John Brome of Lapworth released the same premises to them.<sup>b</sup> Pages 46 and 47 of 3 An. Deeds show several deeds in which Edmund Newnham is associated with Nicholas Catesby as one of the grantees. Jan. 15, 1464-5, there was a feoffment to John Catesby, sergeant-at-law, Nicholas Catesby, and others of lands etc., in Lapworth, Kingswood and Bellesdesert<sup>c</sup> formerly belonging to John Brome of Lapworth and Margaret, his wife.<sup>d</sup> Dec. 9, 1495, Nicholas Catesby deeded to William Woodhull and Elizabeth, his wife, daughter of William Catesby, his lands in certain parts of the counties of Leicester and Northampton formerly belonging to said William Catesby.<sup>e</sup> Dec. 2, 1497, Elizabeth, daughter and heiress of William Catesby, late of Oxford, gent., deceased, through her husband, released to Nicholas Catesby, the elder brother of said William, all actions and debts against said Nicholas.<sup>f</sup> Sept. 30, 1498, Nicholas Catesby, son and heir of Robert

<sup>a</sup>Norris, 16-20; 2 Dugdale, 970.

<sup>b</sup>Norris, 15.

<sup>c</sup>3 An. Deeds, 46, 47.

<sup>d</sup>Near Rowington (Dugdale).

<sup>e</sup>4 An. Deeds, 305.

<sup>f</sup>Id. 163.

<sup>7</sup>3 id. 45.

Catesby, Esq., acknowledged the receipt of an annuity from Dame Margery Bellingham, formerly wife of Thomas Ryton alias Draper.<sup>g</sup> Dec. 20, 1506, Robert Catesby, gentleman, son and heir of Nicholas Catesby, Esq., deeded lands in Warwickshire, which he inherited on his father's death, to Elizabeth Catesby, widow, and Richard Catesby, her son.<sup>h</sup>

---

<sup>g</sup> *Id.* 179.

<sup>h</sup> *Id.* 186.



## COLLES.

The family of Colles<sup>1</sup> was an ancient one of Worcestershire and probably was descended from the family of Cole or Colles of Somerset and Devonshires. They dwelt in Powick, Suckley, and Leigh near the city of Worcester. They owned estates in many parts of Worcester and other shires. Habington (vol. I, pp. 399, 542) says the Colles name had appeared since 1400 and was of 400 years continuance in the county. He had seen Colles deeds with their arms from about 1400 to his own time. Nash,<sup>2</sup> under Suckley, says: "Another capital farm in this hamlet [perhaps the manor of Lulsley] is named Colles Place, which is mentioned in a leger of the priory of Malvern, in the reign of Henry III [1216-1272], as belonging to the family of Colles." The arms<sup>3</sup> were:—Gules, on a chevron argent pelletée four barrulets sable between three lions' heads erased or. Crest:<sup>4</sup> A sea pie with wings endorsed sable platée, preying on a dolphin lying on its back proper.

The pedigree<sup>m</sup> follows:—

1 RICHARD COLLES, of Powick,<sup>n</sup> married Margaret, daughter of Thomas Hall, Esq., of Suckley. He was buried in the Church of Powick in 1440.<sup>o</sup> His son was

2 WILLIAM COLLES, of Bransford in Leigh, who married first Isabell, daughter of Richard Turberville, and second Alice, daughter of William<sup>p</sup> Romney. By his first wife he had William (3). He died in 1506 and was buried at Powick.

<sup>1</sup> Misc. Gen. et Her., 234-240, gives a pedigree from William Cole, of Devonshire, who was living in 1243. The arms are quite different and it is not clear that Richard Colles of Powick was of this line. The name in the old records is written also Collys and Collis. It was doubtless pronounced in two syllables.

<sup>2</sup> History of Worcestershire (1799), v. 2, p. 400.

<sup>3</sup> Harl. Soc. Pubs. 246. Other authorities differ somewhat, but not essentially.

<sup>4</sup> Harl. Soc. Pubs. 40.

<sup>m</sup> Harl. Soc. Pubs. 247; 27 id. 40 & 41; 2 Misc. Gen. et Her., old series, 234-240; 1 Grazebrook, 124.

<sup>n</sup> Misc. Gen. et Her. 234 makes him of Alfrick in Suckley.

<sup>o</sup> 27 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 41 makes him living in 1447-8.

<sup>p</sup> 27 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 112. 2 Misc. Gen. et Her. 234 makes the name Thomas Romney.

3 WILLIAM COLLES of Leigh, born about 1495, who married Margaret, sister and coheiress of John Hitch<sup>q</sup> of Gloucestershire. Habington (vol. I, p. 332) gives the following inscription as in the church of Leigh: "In the southe Ile, beeinge our Ladye's Channcell, on a playne stone, with the Armes of Colles this Inscription. Hic jacet Gulielmus Colles de Leigh in Com. Wigorn. Generosus qui obiit. . . . mensis Auguste, An. Do. 1558, ætatis suæ 63." The stone is now built over by a modern organ. He left a will, dated May 21, 1558, and proved Sept. 30, 1558, in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury.<sup>r</sup> He left to his wife, Margaret, during her widowhood, his house called the Rock, with the pastures belonging to it, which he bought of Thomas Rock, and an adjoining pasture which he bought of Richard Cave, with the tithes of Bransford, then in the occupation of William Lynton. If she married, she was to have £100 in ready money and no more. To his son Michael he gave his lease and interest in the house or parsonage of Chocknell,<sup>s</sup> with all the glebe lands, meadows and pastures belonging to it, in as ample a manner as Richard Harts had of late held and occupied them; also his lease and term of years of a certain pasture in Grimley, Worcestershire, which he had of the demise and grant of the Bishop of Worcester; and his lease and term of years of the tithes within the parish of Claines, which he had of the grant of Roger Crump. To his son William he gave a lease of certain houses in London, which he lately had bought of Edmond Blacknell; also 100 marks "when he shall set up his occupation, or at the age of 21 years, as he will." To his son John he gave all the leases that he had of the Prior and Convent of Much Malvern;<sup>t</sup> his lease and terms of years of the parsonage of Tewksbury, Gloucestershire, which he had of the grant of the late King Edward VI;<sup>v</sup>

<sup>q</sup>Probably the John Hitch mentioned on p. 131 of 27 Harl. Soc. Pubs. Grazebrook (284) gives the arms as: Per fess or and sable, three estoiles counterchanged. 27 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 40 says: Per fess or and argent three estoiles sable.

<sup>r</sup>In English the inscription is: Here lies William Colles of Leigh in the county of Worcester, a gentleman, who died August —, 1558, in his 63rd year. 2 Nash, 76, gives the inscription in substantially the same form.

<sup>s</sup>48 Woodes, Somerset House, London.

<sup>t</sup>A hamlet in Leigh.

<sup>u</sup>That is, Great Malvern.

<sup>v</sup>1547-53.

and certain lands in Herefordshire, which he purchased of Robert Winter. "I will my executors shall take all the profits & rents of the above lands during the minority of my son John, towards his bringing up, & render account thereof & the overplus to the said John." To his daughters Ursula and Elizabeth he gave £100 each, to be paid on their respective marriages. To Eleanor Hitch, William Pytcher (son of Richard Pytcher), and Alice Rudding (daughter of Jane Rudding) he gave £5 each, to be paid on the day of their respective marriages. To Mistress Anne Wythey he gave ten shillings yearly during her life, with meat and drink at the charge of his executors, to pray for his soul and all Christian souls; to each of his men servants, a black coat; to each of his women servants, a black gown; and to every poor man and woman dwelling in Leigh, a bushel of grain. To his son Edmond he willed all his lands, tenements, leases and "Takes," not before disposed of. The residue of his goods he gave to his wife and his son Edmond, whom he made his executors, with power to his wife to require his son Michael to act as executor also. He bequeathed to "Maister Shelddon Esquire" his best gelding or three of his best mares, on condition that he act as one of his overseers, and to Richard Pitchard 40 shillings and a black gown, to be his other overseer. He gave to all his sons present at his burial black gowns; to his daughter Jane, £5; to his servant William Bame, 20 shillings; to Andrew Smyth, the lease of certain lands called Gales in the occupation of William Rumney; to the parson of Leigh, 20 shillings, to pray for him, his mother and his wife and all Christian souls, and to say every month a mass and a dirge for them; to his daughter Anne, 40 shilling; and to William Home, 40 shillings and a black coat. June 29, 1607, a commission was granted to William Colles, next of kin to said deceased, to administer his unadministered goods.

*Children:*

EDMOND, who was a man of wealth and great distinction, having been justice of the peace, a deputy lieutenant and thrice sheriff of the County, and "a Justyce in the Counsell of the Marches of Wales." He purchased the inheritance of the manor of Leigh. He d. in 1606, aged 76, and was buried in Leigh Church."

\*Habington, vol. I, 329, 400; 1 Grazebrook, 124.

**MICHAEL**, of Bradwell, Buckinghamshire, and Hampton in Arden, Warwickshire. His son Humphrey became a barrister, entering the Middle Temple in London August 5, 1592.<sup>a</sup>

**WILLIAM**, a London merchant.<sup>y</sup>

**JOHN**, of Hatfield Court, county of Hereford; m. widow of Wm. Dally.<sup>s</sup>

**ALICE**, who m. first Ralph Odell, of Northamptonshire, and second Foulk Wodhull, second son of Nicholas, Baron of Wodhull.<sup>a</sup>

**ELIZABETH**, m. Lawrence Rompney (Romney), of Knightwick, Worcestershire.<sup>b, d</sup>

**JANE**, m. Edmund Ruding, of Worcestershire.<sup>b, d</sup>

4 **URSULA**, m. William Hawes, of Solihull, Warwickshire, in 1562.

**ANNE**, m. Richard Pychard (or Pitcher), of Cradley, Herefordshire.<sup>o</sup>

**MARY**, m. Raffe Underhill, of Stoneleigh, Co. Warwick.<sup>b, d</sup>

<sup>a</sup>1 Middle Temple Records, 330.

<sup>y</sup>Grazebrook says he was of Parkbury, Hertfordshire. He may have retired to that place. <sup>22</sup> Harl. Soc. Pubs. 43 erroneously makes him the son of Edmond Colles.

<sup>s</sup>Inscription in the church of the parish of Ombersley, Worcestershire: "Heere lyethe the body of Dorothy Colles of Southall in the parishe of Doverdale, daughter to John Nashe of Tapenhall, first the wife of William Dally, and after wife of John Colles, of Hatfield, Com. Heref., Esquire. She departed this life 17 July, 1630, aetatis suae 102." (Habington, vol. 2, p. 229.)

<sup>a</sup>1 Misc. Gen. et Her., 2d Series, 74, 75.

<sup>b</sup>"Pedigree of Colles, of Leye, Co. Worcester," printed in 1867 by Sir Thomas Phillips, Bart. In Bodleian Library, Oxford.

<sup>o</sup>Visitation of Herefordshire, edited by F. W. Weaver in 1886, p. 59.

<sup>d</sup>27 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 115 gives the names somewhat differently.

## PORTER

The Porters originated in Nottinghamshire. Their arms were: Sable, three church-bells argent, a canton ermine. Crest: A portcullis argent, chained or.<sup>6</sup>

- 1 WILLIAM PORTER, of Markham, Co. Nottingham, m. ———.

*Sons:*

WILLIAM, Knight, d. without issue.

JOHN, of Markham, had issue.

- 2 STEPHEN.

HENRY, a monk at Peterborough.

ROBERT, Dean of Lincoln.

- 2 STEPHEN PORTER, m. ——— and d. in Sussex. His son and heir was:

3 RICHARD PORTER, who married Joane, daughter of John Wildegose. Her father married the daughter and coheir of John Adams, of Crowhurst, Sussex. Her grandfather was William Wildegose.<sup>7</sup> The Wildegoses probably lived at Salehurst.

*Children:*

- 4 JOHN.

GEORGE.

ROBERT.

STEPHEN.

Perhaps others.

4 JOHN PORTER, of Bayham in Sussex, yeoman, who married first Anna, daughter of Richard Isted, of Moat House in Mayfield, Sussex,<sup>8</sup> and second Agnes<sup>9</sup> ———, who survived him.

<sup>6</sup>Visitation of Kent (1619), 42 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 155; Berry's Pedigrees of Kent, 321; Berry's Pedigrees of Sussex, 216.

<sup>7</sup>Visit. of Sussex, 53 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 208; Berry's Sussex, 10.

<sup>8</sup>Berry's Sussex, 101, shows John Baker marrying Elizabeth, a daughter of this Richard Isted, at about the same date. See also p. 115. The Isted arms are given in this volume at p. 215. Berry's Kent, 353, says John or Richard Isted, of Morehouse, in Mayfield. Burke's General Armory (p. 532) gives the Isted arms as: Gules, a chevron vair, between three talbots' heads, erased, or. Crest: A buck's head, erased, proper, attired and ducally gorged, or.

<sup>9</sup>Unless Anna should be Agnes.

He died between April 30, 1574 (date of his will), and June 26, 1574 (date of probate). She was living Dec. 21, 1585.

*Children, by first wife:*

5 RICHARD.

MARIA, who m. Thomas Aynscombe,<sup>4</sup> of Mayfield, Sussex, was probably by his first wife. She was living Dec. 21, 1585.

*Children, by second wife, all minors at the date of his will:*

JOHN, living Dec. 21, 1585.

STEPHEN, d. between March 25, 1581 (date of will),<sup>5</sup> and May 6, 1581 (date of probate), unmarried and without issue. He mentions two sisters.

GEORGE, d. between Dec. 21, 1585 (date of his will),<sup>6</sup> and Feb. 8, 1585-6 (date of probate), unmarried and without issue.

ROBERT, living August 22, 1584.

THOMAS, living Dec. 21, 1585.

A DAUGHTER, living March 25, 1581.

5 RICHARD PORTER, of Bayham, married Jane, daughter of Robert Whitfield, of Wadhurst in Sussex. He died between Aug. 22, 1584 (date of his will), and Sept. 5, 1584 (date of probate). His widow married Edward Quimby, Esq., of Allington, Hampshire, who died in 1613 or 1614.<sup>7</sup> Her will, describing her as of Titchfield, Hampshire, was dated Aug. 6, 1618, and is signed by her. A codicil, signed with a mark, is dated June 25, 1621, and describes her as of Lamberhurst, where she was evidently living with her son John. The will and codicil were proved June 5, 1624.<sup>8</sup>

*Children,\* all minors at the date of his will:*

THOMAS, of Goudhurst, Kent, who m. Dionisia, daughter of — Freebody, of Udimore, Sussex.

RICHARD, citizen of London, living Oct. 24, 1643.

<sup>4</sup>63 Harl. Soc. Pubs. 198.

<sup>5</sup>17 Darcy.

<sup>6</sup>7 Windsor.

<sup>7</sup>3 Waters, 1436.

<sup>8</sup>115 Byrde, Somerset House, London; 2 Waters 1436, 1437.

\*See also 2 Hasted's Kent, 376, 377.

JOHN, of Lamberhurst, Kent, who m. Anne, daughter of Josiah Calmady, of Wembury, Co. Devon. He is styled esquire in the probate record. His will<sup>o</sup> is dated Oct. 24, 1643, and was proved Feb. 11, 1644-5.

MARY, who m. Thomas Goodman of Sussex.

6 JANE, who m. Edmond Hawes, of Solihull, Co. Warwick.

MARTHA, d. before May 20, 1604, and who was buried in the Chancel of Frant Church.

ELIZABETH, who m. first Robert Baker, of Withyham, Sussex, who died after May 20, 1604 (date of his will)<sup>p</sup> and second Anthony Fowle. She was living Oct. 24, 1643.

SUSANNA, b. after the date of his will. Mentioned as living unmarried Oct. 24, 1643 (will of her brother John) and Feb. 7, 1652-3 (will<sup>a</sup> of John's son Richard).

Their uncle Stephen Porter gave in his will 20 shillings to Jane and 10 shilling each to Mary, John, Thomas, and Martha.

# ABSTRACT OF THE WILL OF JOHN PORTER OF BATELL IN THE COUNTY OF SUSSEX, YEO- MAN, 30TH APRIL, 1574

I John Porter of Batell in the county of Sussex, do make my last will & testament.

I will my body be buried in the parish church of Batell.

I give to the same church box for my burial 10s.

To the poor man's box of the same church 3s 4d.

To the poor people of Battell 26s 8d, to be bestowed immediately after my burial.

To the poor people of the parish of Frant 13s 4d.

To the poor people of Battell 13s 4d yearly for the space of five years after my death, to be paid by my executors weekly during Lent every year.

I give to Agnes my wife five kyne, one gelding, colour rone, 4 quarters of wheat, 4 quarters of malt, one seam of oats.

My will & mind is that all my household stuff at or in my house at Battell I give unto Agnes my wife.

<sup>o</sup>41 Rivers, Somerset House, London.

<sup>p</sup>61 Harte; 2 Waters, 1345, 1346.

<sup>a</sup>112 Brent.

I will my plate be equally divided between Agnes my wife & Richard my son immediately after my decease.

All my household stuff now remaining at Beygham I give to Richard Porter my son.

I give to Thomas Aynscombe in consideration of the marriage of Maria my daughter £100 to be paid to him or his assigns within one years after my decease. Also I will to the same Thomas Aynscombe my black gelding.

To Thomas Aynscombe my daughter's son, £10, to be paid within one years after my death & the same to be put out to the child's best advantage, until he come to the age of 21 years, & if he die before that age I give to to my daughter Aynscombe & her heirs.

I give to Marie Alchorne my servant £3 6 8.

To John Palmer, John Hayward my servants, to each 6s 8d.

And all my other, cattel & horse, beasts, corne in the field, elsewhere not bequeathed, & "munition & armure belonging to the wars," & all my other goods, debts, chattels & leases not bequeathed, I give to my son Richard whom I ordain & make my sole executor of this my last will & testament.

I appoint my brothers, John Baker, George Porter, John Berham, Robert Porter & Thomas Aynscombe overseers & I give to each of them 40s over & above their reasonable expenses.

And if the said Richard my son refuse to prove this my will then I will my said overseers shall have full power and authority to enter into my leases, debts, cattels, corn, &c, & the woods which I have bought of the said Lord Montague, & take all the profits therefrom for the just payment of my debts.

I give to every one of my own brothers & sisters children 5s each, to be paid within one year of my decease.

This is the last will & testament of me John Porter made & declared the year above written, for the disposition of all my tenements, watermills, waters, lands, meadows, pastures, woods, rents, reversions, & services with all & singular the appurtenances to them belonging, lying & being in the counties of Kent & Sussex as well within liberties as without.

I will & give to Richard Porter my son & his heirs male of his body lawfully begotten all those my tenements, watermills, waters, lands, meadows, pastures, woodlands, rents with appur-



tenances lying & being in the parishes of Brenchlye & Lamberhurst in the county of Kent, and for want of heirs to remain to John Porter & the heirs male &c. for ever & lacking such issue to the next heir male of me the said John Porter.

I give to John Porter my son & his heirs male all my tenements, watermills, waters, lands, rents & all appur<sup>ces</sup> thereto lying in the parish of Marden in the County of Kent, to him & his heirs male forever, & lacking such heirs, to remain to my son Richard & his heirs male, & lacking such heirs to the next heir male of me John Porter.

I give to Stephen Porter my son & his heirs male &c for ever all my marshlands, tenements & heredit<sup>mts</sup> & all appurtenances thereto belonging, lying in the Parish of Hoo, in the county of Sussex, and lacking such heirs, to remain to Thomas Porter my son & his heirs male for ever, & lacking such to the next heir male of me John Porter.

I give to George Porter my son & his heirs male for ever all my marsh lands within the Myle & Liberty of Pevensey, in the County of Sussex, & lacking such heirs, to remain to Robert Porter my son & his heirs male & lacking heirs, to the next heir male of me John Porter.

I give to Agnes my wife the house I dwell in for the term of her life & all my copyhold land called Ford Land, Tassarst, Loxspyche, & the house & garden in the borow of Mongaye, & all that my freehold land & gardens that lie at the side of the King's High way in the borow of Mongaye, which said lands free & copy lie in the borow of Mongay & Owkham, to remain to Thomas Porter my son & his heirs male & lacking such heirs to Stephen Porter my son & his heirs male for ever.

I give to Robert Porter my son & his heirs male, &c, my lands & tenements with all appurtenances on the south west of Bradysell Greene in the parishes of Battell & Hollyngton in Sussex, also an annuity of £4 descended to me by the death of Stephen Porter of Hoo my brother, and for lack of heirs male the annuity to remain to George Porter my son & then to the next heir male of me John Porter. I give to my son Thomas Porter and his heirs male for ever all those my lands in Staplehurst, in Kent, to remain to my son Richard Porter & his heirs male, for ever.

I give to Stephen Porter my son & his heirs male for ever my tenement in Battell that I bought of one Nicholas Bennett, within the borough of Mongaye, to remayne to George Porter my son & his heirs male forever.

I will my wife Agnes be paid £10 yearly out of the manors of Brencheley & Lamberhurst; £3 6 8 from my lands in Marden; £3 6 8 out of my lands in Hoo to be paid half yearly at Michaelmas & Lady Day.

I will my overseers receive the profits of such lands before bequeathed to my five younger sons, until they come to the age of 21 years, for their bringing up, and when they attain that age, I will account should be rendered to them of all profits from such land.

Witnesses: THOMAS WOODLEY  
THOMAS BERWICK  
WILLIAM ROBERTH  
THOMAS ISTD

Proved 26th day of June, 1574, by Richard Porter, executor nominated in the said will.

Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 26 Martin.

# ABSTRACT OF THE WILL OF RIC HARDE PORTER OF BEGHAM IN THE COUNTY OF SUSSEX, 22ND AUGUST, 1584

I Richarde Porter do make my last will & testament.

I give to Jane my wife half my household stuff, cattle & corn, and £200 to be paid within three months after my decease.

I give to Mary my daughter £200 to be set aside as soon as convenient to her use, to be delivered when she attain the age of 21 years, or on her day of marriage, with the overplus of the profits thereof over & above her keeping & education which my overseers & executors have first paid out of such profits, & their necessary expenses sustained in this behalf.

To Jane my daughter the like sum of £200 to be paid in like sort as afore appointed for Mary my daughter.

To Martha my daughter £200 as above.

To Elizabeth my daughter £200 as above.

To the child yet unborn (if it be a maid) the sum of £200. And if any such child die before her portion be payable, then

her part shall remain to the residue of my daughters. And if the said child yet unborn be a man child I give him £300, to be used in like sort to the portion of my said daughters.

I give to Richard my son £200 to be paid in like sort.

To Thomas my son £200 to be paid in like sort.

And if any of my said sons die I will such portion shall remain to the residue of my sons then living (John my son only excepted.)

I will my children be well & virtuously brought up in learning & other good nurture & education.

I will to Thomas my son all my lands in Brenchelye which I bought of Paule Kynotts and if he die before the age of 21 years, without issue lawfully begotten, then I will the same shall remayne to Richard my son & heis heirs, and my will is my executors shall receive the rents & profits thereof until the first of them come to age of 21 years & therewith shall pay such yearly portion as shall be necessary for his education, & of the remnant to make an account.

I will to Thomas & Richard my sons my lease of the parsonage of Gouterst when they or any of them come to the age of 21 years, & if both of them shall die before that time, without issue, then I will the same my lease to my child unborne if it be a son, & the profits of the said parsonage shall be used by my executors until my said sons attain the age of 21 years, for their education & bringing up.

Moreover all my leases in Brencheley & all my leases of Begham & the lands, woods & works there & all other my goods & chattels not bequeathed in this will (my debts & legacies first paid & all other due & necessary charges paid) I give unto John my son, if he shall live to the age of 21 years, & otherwise I give the same to Thomas my son on like condition, & if the said Thomas die before the age of 21 years then I give the same to Richard my son.

And I make my brother Thomas Aynscombe & my brother John Porter my executors of this my last will and testament, until one of the same my sons be of the age of 21 years, & then I will that such son be my executor, & then I will that my said executors first named & my overseers do make a true account to my said son of all receipts of stock & all other things belonging, & of all charges incurred in the execution of this my will.

My will is that Thomas Porter my brother shall yearly during four or five years, if he will, be as a clerk or bailiff of my iron works, & make an account at every year's end to my executors & overseers of all the same charge committed unto him.

I will my brother Thomas Whitefelde & my uncle Isted be overseers of this my will.

I will that the children of John Gillett deceased shall have a lease of such parcels of ground as the said John held of me, in fforme according to an Indenture of Lease thereby already made but not sealed, and for such rents and covenants as are therein contained.

I give to my brother John Porter £40.

To my (brother) Robert Porter £20.

To the children of my brother Aynscombe £40.

To every of my maidservants 20s each.

To Henry my man 40s.

To the rest of my menservants 20s. each.

To my overseers £10 each.

To my brothers Thomas Porter & George 20s each to buy a ring.

To my mother 20s to buy a ring.

To both the Pullens my "ffyners" 20s each.

To Mr. Harris & my cosen Ballard 20s each.

To John Angerfield & Terman my hammermen 20s each.

To "Baylis the Nayler" at Wadherst 20s.

Witnesses: THOMAS HARRIS

RICHARD BALLARD

THOMAS PORTER

GEORGE PORTER

Proved the 5th day of the month of September 1584, by Laurence Swinborne, notary public, & lawful proctor for Thomas Aynscombe & John Porter, executors nominated in the above will.

Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 24 Watson.

## WHITFIELD

The Whitfields of Sussex were sprung from the county of Cumberland. Their arms were: Argent, a bend plain between two cottises engrailed Sable. Crest: Out of a crown vallery a stag's head and neck with antlers expanded or.\*

Waters<sup>†</sup> gives the following pedigree:

1 WILLIAM WHITFIELD, of Whitfield Hall, Cumberland, married —, daughter and heiress of Richard Holme, of the Manor of Alstonmore, Cumberland. His son and heir was:

2 WILLIAM, who married Maud, daughter and coheiress of John Wheatley. His son was

3 JOHN. His son

4 WILLIAM. His son

5 RICHARD. His son

6 RICHARD, of Whitfield Hall. His son and heir

7 MYLES, of Newton Berry<sup>‡</sup> in Alstonmore, Cumberland, married Matilda —. His son was

8 ROBERT WHITFIELD, who came out of the North "80 years since"<sup>§</sup> and dwelt at Wadhurst, Sussex. He married Katharine, widow of — Wenbourne, of Wenbourne, in Wadhurst, and second, Agnes, daughter and heiress of John Giles, of Bidendon, Kent, and died before March 2, 1542-3, when his will,<sup>¶</sup> dated in 1541, was proved. He directed that he be buried in the churchyard at Wadhurst. He mentions his wife Agnes, and his children John, Elizabeth, Robert and Thomas.

<sup>†</sup>1 Clutterbuck's History and Antiquities of the county of Hertford (1815), 189.

<sup>‡</sup>2 Gleanings in England, 1363, 1364. He copied Harleian MS 6164 in the British Museum, with corrections from some other MSS. See also 7 Hasted's Kent, 204. 1 Clutterbuck, 189, gives a pedigree which traces the family to Northumberland and gives 12 generations previous to my number four, from which it is the same. It appears not to include my number 3 and transposes the orders of my Nos. 1 and 2. I have made a few additions from Clutterbuck.

<sup>§</sup>Clutterbuck says Newbury in Alston Moor.

<sup>¶</sup>Perhaps about the year 1525.

<sup>¶</sup>16 Spert; 2 Waters, 1344.

*Children:*

JOHN, who d. between May 14, 1585 (date of this will),<sup>10</sup>  
and June 15, 1585 (date of probate).

ELIZABETH, who m. John Edwards, of Mayfield, Sussex.

9 ROBERT.

THOMAS.

9 ROBERT WHITFIELD, born 9 Henry 8 (1517-18); married first Ann, daughter of George Roberts, of Brenchley, Kent, and second, Agnes, daughter of William Atwood, of Kent. He died before Feb. 16, 1597-8, when his will<sup>11</sup> (dated Dec. 6, 1591) was proved. He is described as gentleman and as of Worth, Sussex. He mentions his daughters Joan Baker, Margaret, Sarah, Jane and Frances, his son Thomas and the latter's wife Mildred and his son William's wife, Mary. He was buried in the Chancel of Emmington Church, near Thame, Oxfordshire.

*Children:*

THOMAS WHITFIELD, of Mortlake in Surrey, who m. Mildred, daughter of Henry Manning, of Greenwich. His son, the Rev. Henry Whitfield, came to Guilford, Conn., in 1639, but returned to England in 1650. Some of his daughters married and remained in Connecticut.<sup>12</sup>

WILLIAM, a clergyman, who d. between Oct. 15, 1610 (date of his will), and March, 1610-11 (date of probate).<sup>13</sup>

MARGARET.

FRANCES.

10 JANE, who m. Richard Porter.

SARAH.

JOAN, who m. Robert Baker.

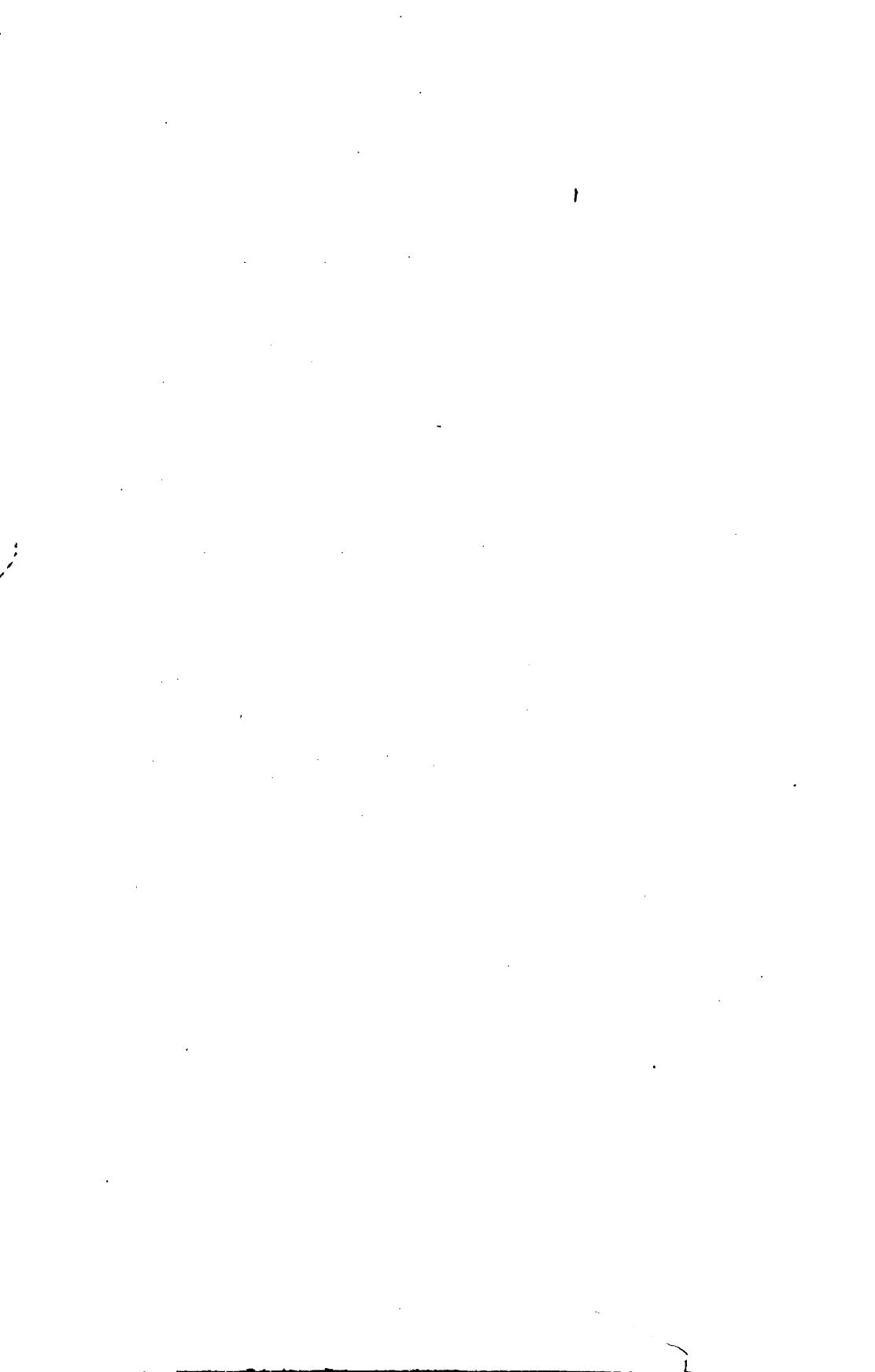
---

<sup>10</sup>31 Brudenell; 2 Waters, 1344.

<sup>11</sup>18 Lewyn; 2 Waters, 1345.

<sup>12</sup>3 Waters, 1384.

<sup>13</sup>2 Waters, 1346.



**PART II**  
**IN AMERICA**





## HAWES<sup>a</sup>

### FIRST GENERATION

1 EDMOND<sup>1</sup> HAWES<sup>b</sup> was born in Solihull, Warwickshire, England, and was baptized in the parish church Oct. 15, 1612.<sup>d</sup> He was the third and youngest surviving son of Edmond Hawes, gentleman, of Solihull, and Jane (daughter of Richard Porter of Bayham, Sussex), his wife. A school existed in Solihull as early as 1560, when the endowment of certain chantry chapels in the parish church was devoted to the salary of a schoolmaster.<sup>e</sup> Mr. Horne, a graduate of Oxford University, was master during the boyhood of Edmond Hawes, the emigrant, who was no doubt educated in this school, where Latin would have been a principal element in the curriculum.<sup>e</sup> Francis Hawes,<sup>f</sup> a relative (degree not known), of Belchamp St. Paul, Essex, by his will<sup>g</sup> dated Nov. 7, 1621, and proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, April 2, 1622, devised to him all his freehold and copyhold estates, subject to an annuity of five pounds a year to Anne Morris, the testator's

<sup>a</sup>Different families of the name in this country and public officials have spelled the name Haws, Hawse, Hause, and in similar ways, but the family here described has always used the form Hawes.

<sup>b</sup>He wrote his name Edmond, not Edmund, and the early records follow him. The printed Plymouth Colony records in a few instances and Pope (p. 242) have the name erroneously Edmond Howes. The books exhibit some confusion in the use of the names Hawes and Howes, Savage (vol. 2, pp. 379 & 380), for instance, having Jeremiah and Thomas Hawes, when the name should be Howes. Baylies in his History of New Plymouth has in several places *Edward Hawes* erroneously for *Edmond*, and Jeremiah and Thomas Hawes erroneously for Howes. Deyo's Barnstable County (p. 477) says erroneously that *Edward Howes* succeeded Anthony Thacher as treasurer of Yarmouth. 5 Plymouth Col. Recs. (p. 214) speaks of "Capt." Hawes. The name should be Howes.

<sup>d</sup>Parish Register Society, v. 53, p. 65. Under baptisms in 1612 the entry is: "The fifteenth daie of October, Mr. Edmonde, sonne of Mr. Edmonde Hawes, de Hillfeeldes."

<sup>e</sup>*Supra*, p. 8.

<sup>f</sup>The Vict. Hist. of Warwickshire, vol. 2, pp. 357-60.

<sup>g</sup>He was probably the "fraunces Hawe" who was baptised in Solihull Jan. 19, 1560-1. (Par. Reg. Soc. 53, p. 16.)

<sup>h</sup>Abstract, p. 133, *infra*.

sister. Mrs. Morris and William Rastall, an executor of the will, having entered upon the lands devised and attempted to suppress the will, Edmond Hawes the younger, by Edmond Hawes the elder, his father and guardian, brought a suit in Chancery May 15, 1622, to establish his right.<sup>3</sup> The record shows that on Oct. 27, 1623, the court decided that the case should be tried at the common law and not in chancery. A compromise seems to have been arranged since by deed dated Feb. 12, 1633-4, he sold to Sir Leventhorpe Franche, Knight, for the consideration of 250 pounds, his interest (stated to be one half) in these estates.<sup>4</sup> He had on Feb. 14, 1626-7, bound himself to Edmond Warnett,<sup>5</sup> citizen and cutler of London, for the term of eight years from Feb. 2 preceding. He completed his apprenticeship, and was sworn free cutler Dec. 9, 1634.<sup>6</sup> His grandfather, Richard Porter, had iron works and the family was thus probably brought into relations with the Cutlers' Company.<sup>7</sup> The city of London during the period of his residence there numbered about 130,000 inhabitants, and with its suburbs, including the city of Westminster, about 300,000.<sup>8</sup> He had evidently for some time contemplated emigration to America, and having sold his estates and completed his apprenticeship, he proceeded to carry his purpose into effect. He must have been among the well-to-do of the early settlers. On and about April 5th, 1635, 53 men, youths and boys, besides the wives and children of divers of these, shipped as passengers at Southampton on the ship *James* of London, 300 tons, Wm. Cooper, master. Among them was Edmond Hawes, described as a cutler, late of London.<sup>9</sup> He had relatives near Southampton, and this may have determined him in his choice of a point of departure. It appears

<sup>3</sup>Abstract, p. 134, *infra*.

<sup>4</sup>Abstract, p. 135, *infra*.

<sup>5</sup>Probably a connection of the family by marriage. Robert Baker of Bayham married Elizabeth Porter, sister of Jane, mother of Edmond<sup>4</sup> Hawes. In his will (Harte, 61), dated May 20, 1604, he mentions brother and sister Hawes and also brother and sister Warnett. His son John Baker in his will (Clarke, 12) dated Oct. 16, 1623, mentions aunt and uncle Hawes and also aunt and uncle Warnett.

<sup>6</sup>Records of Cutlers' Company of London, p. 136, *infra*.

<sup>7</sup>Richard Porter's will, *supra*, p. 115.

<sup>8</sup>16 Encycl. Brit., 965.

<sup>9</sup>Drake's Founders of New England, 55 & 56; 14 N. E. Reg. 329, 332-334.

from the above (pp. 37, 109) that his mother's family lived at or near Bayham in Sussex, who could readily be visited on his way from London to Southampton, and that his maternal grandmother after her marriage with Edward Quimby had resided very near that port. Winthrop, in his History (Journal) vol. 1, page 152, Hosmer's edition, says, under date of June 3, 1635, that on this date two Dutch ships arrived, coming from the Texel in five weeks three days, and then says: "Here arrived also, the same day, the James a ship of three hundred tons, with cattle and passengers, which came all safe from Southampton within the same time. Mr. Graves was master, who had come every year for these seven years." In the London office the Master's name is Cooper. Savage thinks Graves might be owner.<sup>o</sup> It has been said that the "James" arrived at Newbury,<sup>p</sup> and perhaps other towns have been claimed as the landing place. There is, however, no doubt that she arrived at Boston. Gov. Winthrop states that she arrived "here." When any other port than Boston is intended, he names it. Between his<sup>pp</sup> arrival in Boston, June 3, 1635, and Oct. 2, 1637, when he was granted land in Duxbury, it is not known where he was nor what he was doing. Many of his fellow passengers on the "James" went to Newbury, several to Salem and a few remained in Boston. Of his fellow passengers, William Paddy, who like himself was from London, went to Plymouth, where he was granted land March 14, 1635-6,<sup>q</sup> and Hawes *may* have been in Plymouth some time before the Duxbury grant was made to him, but Pope<sup>r</sup> is wrong in making him a proprietor in Plymouth. He later owned land in Marshfield. After he sold the land first granted to him in Duxbury, he is described as of that town, and no ground appears for the statement of Winsor that he removed to Marshfield.<sup>s</sup> His fellow passenger, William Kemp, seems to have followed him to Duxbury, where he was granted land Jan. 7, 1638-9.<sup>t</sup> Hawes was not on the

<sup>o</sup>Savage's edition of Winthrop, vol. 1, p. 192.

<sup>p</sup>Swift's Old Yarmouth, 45, 54, 55; Deyo's Barnstable County, 456. In these works it is also said that the James sailed on or about April 6. This was about the date of shipment of Edmond Hawes and others. Winthrop's statement would show that she did not sail earlier than April 26.

<sup>pp</sup>Hawes's.

<sup>q</sup>1 Plym. Col. Recs. 40.

<sup>r</sup>Pioneers, 221.

<sup>s</sup>History of Duxbury, 266.

<sup>t</sup>1 Plym. Col. Recs. 109.

list of those between 16 and 60 years of age able to bear arms in August, 1643, in the Plymouth Colony. The omission may have been due to lameness or some other physical disability that rendered him incapable of bearing arms, or it is possible that in the interval between leaving Duxbury and taking up his residence in Yarmouth, he visited England for family or other reasons. His removal to Yarmouth may be assumed to have been due to the presence there of his fellow passenger on the *James, Anthony*<sup>1</sup> Thacher, who was one of the original grantees of the town. Thacher was the older and was the leading man of Yarmouth and Hawes was the next in position until the former's death in 1667, when Hawes took his place and kept it till his death in 1693. They held office together, dwelt side by side and were evidently close friends. Hawes is first mentioned in the Plymouth Colony Records Oct. 2, 1637, when ten acres of upland were granted to him in Duxbury, "lyinge crosse Greens Harbor Path, next to Wilm Mullens on the south side."<sup>2</sup> Aug. 7, 1638, he became surety for Thomas Boardman of Sandwich, who had come from London, on a bond of 80 pounds for Boardman's good behavior. Edmond Hawes is here styled "yeoman" and described as of Duxbury. The bond was released four days later.<sup>3</sup> April 1, 1639, he is among those who requested of the Court of Assistants upland and meadow.<sup>4</sup> April 6, 1640, his lands above described are referred to.<sup>5</sup> Nov. 2, 1640, he was "graunted thirty acres next Daniel Coles lands, beyond the South River, wth meddow land to it, if it be there to be had."<sup>6</sup> This tract was within the bounds afterward fixed for Marshfield. Sept. 10, 1641, he sold to Robert Carver, sawyer, of Duxbury, his ten acres of upland above described, "wth all his labours in & aboute the same," the consideration being 2000 feet of sawn boards. A marginal note states that "this bargain is reversed by consent of both partis in June the 7th, 1648."<sup>7</sup> March 1, 1641-2, he is mentioned as constable of Duxbury. He was sworn as such June 7, 1642. The

<sup>1</sup>This is the modern spelling. Thacher himself wrote his name Antony.

<sup>2</sup>1 Plym. Col. Recs. 66.

<sup>3</sup>Ib. 94.

<sup>4</sup>Ib. 120.

<sup>5</sup>Ib. 146.

<sup>6</sup>Ib. 165.

<sup>7</sup>1 Plym Col. Deeds, 75.

same year he was surveyor of highways for that town.<sup>b</sup> June 7, 1642, he was on a jury.<sup>c</sup> June 5, 1644, he was admitted a freeman and was on the grand jury.<sup>d</sup> He appears not to have been sworn as a freeman at that court, since in the proceedings of the Court of March 3, 1644-5, there is this entry: "Edmond Hawes, of Yarmouth, admitted freeman this Court and sworne."<sup>e</sup> He had removed to Yarmouth before the end of 1644 according to modern reckoning, for on Jan. 7, 1644-5, he was a witness with Anthony Thacher to a deed by Nicholas Simpkins of Yarmouth to Andrew Hallett of the same place conveying land in that town.<sup>f</sup> He seems to have taken the oath of fidelity at Duxbury before his removal to Yarmouth.<sup>g</sup> June 2, 1646, a committee of one from each town, including Edmond Hawes, was appointed to "consider of a way for the defraying the charges of the ma<sup>trates</sup> table, by way of excise upon wyne & other thinges."<sup>h</sup> July 7, 1646, he was among the "men nominated and appoynted in every Towne to recover the Excise & gather it." June 1, 1647, June 7, 1648, June 8, 1664, and Oct. 3, 1665, he was again appointed receiver of excise for Yarmouth. On the last occasion two others were joined with him.<sup>i</sup> On July 7, 1646, he was fined 12 pence for non-attendance as committee or deputy for Yarmouth at the court of that date. At the same time his colleague Anthony Thacher and the two deputies for Barnstable were fined 6 pence each for non-attendance. It is probable there was some common cause for the non-attendance from Barnstable and Yarmouth. Why Hawes was fined double the others does not appear.<sup>j</sup> June 7, 1648, he begins to be styled "Mr." in the records. In the proceedings of the General Court of that date appears this entry: "Mr. Edmond Haws presenting a parsell of waights to the Court, to bee the standerd for the waights of Yarmouth,

<sup>b</sup> Plym. Col. Recs. 34, 40; Winsor's Duxbury 22; Peirce's Colonial Lists, 53.

<sup>c</sup> Plym. Col. Recs. 31.

<sup>d</sup> *ib.* 71.

<sup>e</sup> *Ib.* 80.

<sup>f</sup> Plym. Col. Deeds, 173; 10 Mf. 141, 142.

<sup>g</sup> Plym. Col. Recs. 182.

<sup>h</sup> *ib.* 101.

<sup>i</sup> *Ib.* 105, 116, 125; 4 *ib.* 67, 105; Plym. Col. Laws, 187.

<sup>j</sup> Plym. Col. Recs. 106.

the Court doe alow them so to bee."<sup>k</sup> Differences having arisen among the inhabitants of Yarmouth respecting the division of the lands there, the Court March 7, 1647-8, appointed Captain Myles Standish to settle them. On May 14, 1648, he ordered among other things that "Mr. Hawes shall enjoy 8 acars of upland or thereabouts, in the west feild,<sup>l</sup> which hee bought of Goodman Chase," and that "Mr. Hawes shall relinquish eight acares of land granted to him [by the town or its committee] in the weste feild, and take it up in som other convenient place." He also ordered that Robert Dennis should enjoy ten acres which he bought of Mr. Hawes. Edmond Hawes was one of the representatives of the town in these negotiations.<sup>m</sup> June 8, 1649, Mr. Hawes conveyed to Thomas Bourne of Marshfield about 30 acres of upland in Marshfield, lying on the N. side of the South River between the lands of Daniel Cole and John Alden, with the meadow belonging thereto.<sup>n</sup> June 6, 1650, he was on a jury.<sup>o</sup> Oct. 2, 1650, he with others had a suit against John Crow, William Nickerson and Lt. William Palmer, but the grounds of it do not appear.<sup>p</sup> He was one of the witnesses to a deed by an Indian to trustees for the town of Scituate, which was recorded in 1653.<sup>q</sup> The inventory of the estate of Thomas Chillingworth of Marshfield, sworn to June 7, 1653, contains an item of "2 tractes of land with meddow belonging to them bought of late of Mr. Edmond ffreeman and Edmond hawes," appraised at 65 pounds.<sup>r</sup> Mr. Hawes gave full power to John Washburn, Sr., to sell his meadow lying next to Andrew Ring's at Bluefish River, in Duxbury, and Washburn conveyed the same to William Tubbs. These instruments were recorded in 1654 immediately after a deed by Tubbs to Experience Mitchell, dated Nov. 29, 1653, conveying, besides other land, "an acre of meddow and two acres of mersh

<sup>k</sup>Ib. 123, 126.

<sup>l</sup>"The West Field was an open tract, cultivated by the Indians, bounded southerly by Dennis Pond, westerly by the bounds of Barnstable, northerly it extended nearly to the present county road, and easterly to Hawes' Lane" (1 Otis's Barnstable Families, 462 n.).

<sup>m</sup>2 Plym. Col. Recs. 128, 130; Swift, 48, 54, 55.

<sup>n</sup>1 Plym. Col. Deeds, 174.

<sup>o</sup>7 Plym. Col. Recs. 40.

<sup>p</sup>Ib. 50.

<sup>q</sup>2 Plym. Col. Deeds, 99; 6 Mf. 100.

<sup>r</sup>1 Plym. Col. Wills, 120; 11 Mf. 157, 158.

meddow formerly bought of Edmond hawes."<sup>2</sup> Feb. 22, 1655-6, he was one of those who took the inventory of John Darby of Yarmouth.<sup>3</sup> In 1655-6 he represented both Yarmouth and Barnstable in the letting of the trade "att Kennebecke."<sup>4</sup> In 1658 he represented Yarmouth in a controversy between the town and Anthony Thacher, Thomas Howes and John Crow, the committee charged with disposing of the common lands, respecting certain Indian lands, which controversy was adjusted by John Alden and Capt. Josias Winslow as arbitrators.<sup>5</sup> June 10, 1658, June 16, 1664, June 9, 1665, and June 7, 1674, he was one of the auditors of the Colonial Treasurer's accounts.<sup>6</sup> Sept. 14, 1659, he was one of those who took the inventory of William Chase of Yarmouth.<sup>7</sup> June 7 and Oct. 6, 1659, he is mentioned as constable of Yarmouth.<sup>8</sup> In that year he again represented Yarmouth respecting the Kennebeck trade, which had been interrupted by Indian troubles.<sup>9</sup> In 1663 with Anthony Thacher he appraised the books left by the Rev. John Miller.<sup>10</sup> June 7, 1665, he was one of nine men to whom were granted the lands (except 100 acres allowed to William Nickerson) at "Mannamoiett" (Chatham) which said Nickerson had illegally purchased of the Indians.<sup>11</sup> July 3, 1672, these lands were conveyed to Nickerson by the grantees for a consideration of 90 pounds.<sup>12</sup> Nov. 20, 1666, he was named as overseer in the will of John Joyce of Yarmouth.<sup>13</sup> April 2, 1667, Mr. Anthony Thacher, Mr. Edmond Hawes and Thomas Howes, together with the commissioned officers in the town, were appointed the Council of War for Yarmouth by the Council of War for the Colony.<sup>14</sup> Mr. Hawes was again appointed on the town Council of War Feb. 29,

<sup>2</sup>2 Plym. Col. Deeds, 123; 8 Mf. 73.

<sup>3</sup>5 N. E. Reg. 335; 14 Mf. 112.

<sup>4</sup>3 Plym. Col. Recs. 96.

<sup>5</sup>1b. 146.

<sup>6</sup>8 ib. 93, 110, 113, 141.

<sup>7</sup>5 N. E. Reg. 388.

<sup>8</sup>3 Plym. Col. Recs. 163, 173.

<sup>9</sup>1b. 170, 171.

<sup>10</sup>1 Pope, 314.

<sup>11</sup>4 Plym. Col. Recs. 96, 102.

<sup>12</sup>3 Plym. Col. Deeds, 252.

<sup>13</sup>6 N. E. Reg. 188.

<sup>14</sup>4 Plym. Col. Recs. 145, 146.



1675-6, this time at its head.<sup>f</sup> June 30, 1667, he with others (his name standing second on the list) signed a paper to the Governor and Assistants in favor of the Rev. Thomas Thornton against an attack by Nicholas Nickerson, of which a reduced facsimile appears in Swift's Old Yarmouth (p. 90) and of which a copy is appended hereto (p. 138 *infra*).<sup>g</sup> Sept. 13, 1667, he was one of those who took the inventory of Anthony Thacher.<sup>h</sup> Dec. 11, 1668, he was one of those who took the inventory of William Clarke.<sup>i</sup> The will of William Lumpkin, of Yarmouth, dated July 23, 1668, contained this clause: "I Doe Nominate and appoint my beloved frinds Mr. Edmond hawes and John Thacher; as frinds in trust; To see this my last will and Testament truely p<sup>r</sup>formed." Mr. Hawes was a witness and deposed to the will June 24, 1671, before Thomas Hinckley, Assistant.<sup>j</sup> June 30, 1670, he was one of the overseers of the will of William Hedge, of Yarmouth.<sup>k</sup> In 1672 Edmond Hawes was appointed chairman of the committee charged with disposing of the common lands of Yarmouth.<sup>l</sup> In 1674 his house was burned and with it the town records. A new house was erected on the same site.<sup>m</sup> In 1674 he was one of the appraisers of part of the estate of Thomas Phillips.<sup>n</sup> June 1, 1676, he was one of the appraisers of the estate of the Rev. John Mayo of Yarmouth.<sup>o</sup> The same year he was one of the rate makers for Yarmouth. His tax was four pounds nine shillings and five pence, the highest, that of Joseph Severance, being 16 pounds and three shillings and the total 297 pounds.<sup>p</sup> Nov. 20, 1679, he witnessed the will of Samuel Ryder, of Yarmouth, and deposed to it Feb. 25, 1679-80. He was one of those who took the inventory Dec. 9, 1679. The will contains this

<sup>f</sup> *Ib.* 186.

<sup>g</sup> See 4 *ib.* 158. In the Swift photograph appear the signatures of Edmond Hawes, James Matthews, John Crow, Richard Taylor, Jeremiah Howes and Richard Sears, ancestors of the writer.

<sup>h</sup> *N. E. Reg.* 177.

<sup>i</sup> *Plym. Col. Wills in Barn. Prob. Office*, 298.

<sup>j</sup> *Plym. Col. Wills* (pt. 1) 30; 12 *Mf.* 140.

<sup>k</sup> *Plym. Col. Wills in Barn. Prob. Office*, 300.

<sup>l</sup> *Swift*, 124.

<sup>m</sup> *Ib.* 95.

<sup>n</sup> *Plym. Col. Wills in Barn. Prob. Office*, 313.

<sup>o</sup> *Plym. Col. Wills* (pt. 1) 165; 9 *Mf.* 120.

<sup>p</sup> *Swift*, 105; 2 *Freeman*, 195.

clause: "I Doe alsoe Request my trusty and welbeloved frinds Mr. Edmond Hawes, and John Thacher to be helpfull to my Executors, as Need may require, Concerning this my Last will."<sup>44</sup> Jan. 21, 1679-80, with John Thacher he fixed the bounds of the land of Richard Taylor, Sr., near Nobscusset in Yarmouth.<sup>45</sup> He was one of the executors named in the will of Thomas Folland, Sr., of Yarmouth, dated Oct. 1, 1686, and proved May 31, 1687.<sup>46</sup> Thomas Boardman, of Yarmouth, in his will dated Aug. 9, 1689, requested Mr. Edmond Hawes and John Thacher to be helpfull to his executrix.<sup>47</sup> Hawes was deputy for Yarmouth to the General Court at Plymouth in 1645 and fifteen terms thereafter until and including 1675. He was one of the selectmen of the town in 1666, when selectmen were first chosen in the Colony, and continuously thereafter until and including 1688, 23 years in all. With one or two exceptions, his name headed the list during all these years.<sup>48</sup> He was town clerk and treasurer from 1667 till his death, 27 years, succeeding Anthony Thacher, the first incumbent, upon the latter's death.<sup>49</sup> The duties of the selectmen were important and largely of a judicial character.<sup>50</sup> Mr. Hawes had other lands than those mentioned above, as appears by the following extract from page 17 of the Book of Grants of Yarmouth, commenced in 1672 and referring to some earlier grants: "Given and granted to Mr. Edmond Hawes formerly his heirs and assigns forever twelve acers of land at ye South Sea which is now in ye tene-ment and poscescion of John Hathaway and eight acers of Meddow to acers of it being an iland lying and being in ye lone tree creek and is ye biggest iland and the other six acres lying and being in ye meddows at ye dockters Wares, 1669." The South Sea was on the south side of Cape Cod on Vineyard Sound opposite Yarmouthport. The "iland" is surrounded by salt meadow and lies N. of Yarmouthport between it and the bay about 1/2 m. from the Barnstable line. "Dockters wares" lay on the South Sea. Among the first settlers of Yarmouth

<sup>44</sup> Plym. Col. Wills (pt. 1) 45, 46; 11 Mf. 51.

<sup>45</sup> Plym. Col. Deeds, 142, 143.

<sup>46</sup> Barn. Prob. Recs. 5; 3 Mf. 176.

<sup>47</sup> Barn. Prob. Recs. 27; 10 Mf. 102.

<sup>48</sup> Plym. Col. Recs. *passim*.

<sup>49</sup> Swift, 238; Peirce, 16.

<sup>50</sup> Plym. Col. Laws, 213, 217-219, 238.

was Thomas Starr, a physician, who in 1645 was granted lands by the Colony Court, including four acres of meadow on the S. side of the town toward the South Sea.<sup>a</sup> It is probable that he erected fishweirs here and thus gave a name to the locality. The house of Mr. Hawes stood in the N. W. part of the town, now Yarmouthport, between those of Anthony Thacher and Andrew Hallett. Next to Thacher was John Miller.<sup>b</sup> An inscribed stone near the salt marsh now marks the site of the Thacher house. The residence of Edmond Hawes was about a quarter of a mile S. of the Thacher tablet. It is also said (1890) that Edmond Hawes lived on the lot in the rear of the store of J. Knowles & Co.<sup>c</sup> Otis says that the Hawes farm was where Edward W. Crocker resided about 1860.<sup>d</sup> "The house of Edmund Hawes is supposed to have stood near the Lyceum Hall in the N. W. part of the town. In about 1675 his house burnt and all the town records with it. A new house was built on or near the same spot."<sup>e</sup> The conflagration doubtless took place in 1674, since the new records date from that year.<sup>f</sup> The Yarmouth records mention the death of the wife of Edmond Hawes on July 19, 1689, but do not give her name. Winsor in his *History of Duxbury* (p. 266) states that her name was Lucy, but gives no authority. It is noticeable that none of his grandchildren had that name, and it is possible that Winsor, seeing in the Colony records Lucy, wife of Thomas Boardman, in connection with Edmond Hawes's suretyship for Boardman, may inadvertently have taken her to be the wife of Hawes. His first grandson is named Edmond for him and it may be that his first granddaughter, Elizabeth, was named for his wife. On the other hand, perhaps Lucy is a name not likely to be continued at that period of Colonial history, and Winsor may have seen some deed acknowledged by her. Acknowledgments by

<sup>a</sup>Swift, 55, 80; 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 81, 82.

<sup>b</sup>2 Plym. Col. Recs. 128, 130; Swift, 45, 54, 55.

<sup>c</sup>Deyo's Barn. Co. 457.

<sup>d</sup>Vol. 1, p. 486.

<sup>e</sup>W. P. Davis (1882), for many years town clerk and an authority on Yarmouth history.

<sup>f</sup>3 Mf. 207. Lyceum Hall and the Knowles store are near together. Hawes Lane is still a thoroughfare. "Clark's Neck is in the northerly part of Yarmouth, west of the Alms House. It was successively called Gorham's Matthews', and Hawes' Neck." (1 Otis, 415n.).

the wife were required by a law passed Oct. 25, 1645,<sup>cc</sup> but seem frequently not to have been recorded in early times. It is not certain that the wife who died in 1689 was his first wife and so the mother of his son John,<sup>2</sup> nor is it certain whether he was married in England or America nor whether he had other children who died young. He died June 9, 1693, and was buried the next day.<sup>d</sup> He left a will dated May 5, 1692, with a codicil dated March 31, 1693, which were proved July 20, 1693.<sup>e</sup> The will states that he was "aged and under much bodily decay and weakness." It mentions his son John and the latter's wife Desire, grandsons Edmond, John, Joseph (then under age), Jabez, Ebenezer, Isaac and Benjamin, and granddaughters Elizabeth Dogged (Dogget), Mary Bacon, Desire Hawes and Experience Hawes. He gives a legacy to his great-grandchildren without naming them, and makes his son John executor. The codicil shows his land to be bounded on the E. by John Thacher's and on the W. by John Hallett's. The inventory of his estate taken Aug. 1, and sworn to Aug. 29, 1693, including debts due him, amounted to 132 pounds and nine shillings, of which 100 pounds represented real estate. Against this there was due to his son John "for diat and tendance" the sum of 29 pounds and three shillings. It is likely that he had made gifts to his son on the latter's marriage and that the destruction of his house, carrying with it the loss of personal property including books, had further reduced his estate. The following extract from Swift's *Old Yarmouth* (pp. 54 & 55) is inserted, though containing some inaccuracies: "Edmund Hawes came passenger in ship James, of London, which sailed from Southampton, England, about the sixth of April, 1635.<sup>f</sup> He was described as a 'cutler,' doubtless to avoid being detained by the authorities, as other emigrants were for similar reasons.<sup>g</sup> He was also set down as late of London. Mr. Hawes resided for some years at Duxbury before he came to this town. In 1645 he was an inhabitant of Yarmouth and a

<sup>cc</sup>2 Plym. Col. Recs. 93.

<sup>d</sup>Yar. Recs.; Swift, 55.

<sup>e</sup>1 Barn. Prob. Recs. 83, 84; *infra*, p. 139.

<sup>f</sup>Ib. 85; a copy, p. *infra*. 142.

<sup>g</sup>This was about the date of shipment, not of sailing.

<sup>h</sup>He was in fact a cutler.

Deputy to the Court. He was appointed in 1672 chairman of the Land Committee, and for many years was one of the board of selectmen and Assessors. He held the position of Town Clerk, succeeding Anthony Thacher, at the time of his death. His lands were situated between the lands of the Hallets and the Thachers, at the eastern part of what is now called Hallet Street, and the highway running to the easterly side of Dennis Pond was long known as 'Hawes's Lane.' He survived nearly all the first settlers in Yarmouth. His death is recorded with great formality in the old records: 'Mr. Edmund Hawes died upon the 9th day of June, and was buried the tenth day of June one thousand six hundred and ninety three, 1693.' His age at the time of his death is not given, but he must have been about eighty years old.<sup>4</sup> He was a man of education and good parts, and was a leading character of the town and colony. He had one son, John, who was also a man of influence and high character, and from whom the families in Chatham and other places in the county descended. None of his male descendants of the name are now [1884] resident in Yarmouth." Respecting Edmond Hawes, it may be observed that Winsor, in his *History of Duxbury* (p. 81), says the office of constable was one "of high trust and responsibility, and none were elected to it but men of good standing." In fact, in early times, constables instead of being mere peace officers, as now, had various other functions, such as acting as collectors of taxes, as coroners in summoning juries of inquest, and when a call was made for military duty, they impressed men for the service.<sup>5</sup> Swift in "Old Yarmouth" (p. 79), speaking of the early settlers, says: "Anthony Thacher, Edmond Hawes, and Richard Sears were certainly men of education and social standing in England"; and (p. 81): "Lawyers were not tolerated in the Colony, but conveyances, wills and other legal writings were executed by Anthony Thacher, Edmund Hawes and John Miller, according to the formulas of English practice." Swift also (p. 221) says: "Edmund Hawes, Anthony Thacher, Andrew Hallet, senior, and others of the first settlers of this town, were men of good acquirements; and, with the first ministers, kept up the standard of education, better than it was reasonable to

<sup>4</sup>He was 81.

<sup>5</sup>See 11 N. E. Reg. 114 n. and 36 N. E. Reg. 174 and 255, at p. 266.

expect," in a primitive community. Edmond Hawes was born four years after the poet Milton and four years before the death of Shakespeare, whose birthplace at Stratford-on-Avon was in the same county as Solihull and only about 18 miles distant from it in a southerly direction. It is quite possible that the emigrant's father may have had a personal acquaintanceship with the great dramatist. Quebec was founded by the French but four years before Edmond Hawes was born, and the English settlement at Jamestown had its beginning only five years before. He was 8 years old when the Mayflower first reached Plymouth. With the exception of twelve years at the beginning and seven years at the close, he lived through the entire 17th century, his life covering much of the reign of James I, the reign of Charles I, the supremacy of Cromwell, the reigns of Charles II and James II, and the beginning of the reign of William and Mary. He was thus a contemporary of the momentous events of those periods, which meant so much to the civil and religious liberty of the mother country and the colonies. His life covered the entire separate existence of the Plymouth colony, and for over 50 years he was a prominent actor in its affairs. When he reached Boston, its settlement was less than five years old. The population of the Massachusetts Colony was perhaps 4000 and of Plymouth Colony 500.<sup>1</sup> When he died, the united colonies numbered about 47,000 (Massachusetts 40,000 and Plymouth 7000).<sup>2</sup>

**ABSTRACT OF THE WILL OF FRANCIS HAWES OF  
BELCHAMPE ST. PAULE IN THE COUNTY OF  
ESSEX, NOVEMBER 7TH, 1621**

I Francis Hawes do make my last will & testament. I will my body be buried in the Church or Churchyard of Belchampe.

I give and bequeathe all & singular my lands, houses, & tenements "al [sic] well coppie as free" unto Edmond Hawe als Hawes, being the youngest son of Edmond Hawe als Hawes of

<sup>1</sup> Palfrey's *New England*, 331, 332, 335, 371.

<sup>2</sup> Appletons' *Am. Cycl.* 259.

Solihull in the County of Warwick, gent., & to his heirs for ever, Provided that out of these lands £5 a year be allowed to my Sister Anne Morrice to be paid to her or her assigns at her lawful request being made at my now dwelling house called Coles situated in Belchamp St. Paule, at the Feast of Annunciation & the Feast of St. Michael.

And after the death of my Sister An Morrice I will & bequeathe the said £5 to Arthur Hawe alias Hawes of Solihull aforesaid & to his heirs for ever, to be paid at the said feasts.

I give to An & Mary Pining, daughters of my late sister Joane Pining, £5 each.

*Executors:* Henry Rastell of Stanford in the County of Lincoln, gent., & William Rastell, his brother.

The rest of my goods I give & bequeathe to Ann Morrice my sister and her six children:—Golding Morrice, Thomas Morrice, William Morrice, An Morrice, Ursula Morrice & Joan Morrice, to be divided amongst them.

Signed: FRANCIS HAWES.

Witnesses: William Nelson  
Christopher Browne  
Nicholas Morrice

Proved 2nd April 1622 by William Rastell, one of the Executors nominated in the above will, power being reserved to the other Executor Henry Rastell.

(P. C. C., Savile 80.)

## ABSTRACT OF BILL IN CHANCERY

### HAWES V. MORRIS.

15 May, 1622. Orator Edmond Hawes the younger, gent., an infant within the age of 14 years, by Edmond Hawes of Solihull, co. Warwick, the elder, his father and guardian. Whereas Francis Hawe, als Hawes, late of Belchampe St. Paul, co. Essex, dec., was seized of and in one house and barn with two gardens, 120 acres of land, being freehold & worth £20 per ann., and of copyhold holden of the Manor of Belchampe St. Paul.

Francis having no issue & your Orator being of his name & blood & one whom he much loved & affected & desired to p'ferre & advance as himself often affirmed. The 7 Novr last Francis made his will & devised all his houses, lands, both free & Copyhold, to your Orator, but did declare his sister Ann Morrice should have yearly for life £5 to be paid at the then dwelling house of Francis called Coles in Belchampe St. Paul and after the death of Ann Morrice the £5 to Arthur Hawes for ever. A surrender to the use of the will was made 24 Feby last. Testator died 25 or 26 Feby last past, immediately after whose death the said Ann Morrice & Wm Rastall possessed themselves of the aforesaid will & of all the deeds. Last Lady Day your Orator paid Ann Morrice £5— according to the aforesaid will.

Ann & William have entered the lands, which may tend to the disinherittance of your said Orator & is contrary to all equity, so a writ is asked for against Anne Morrice & William Rastall.

The answer of Ann Morris was that the land came to this debt, as sister and next heir of the entire blood of Francis Hawes, and she does not know that Francis made such will.

(Chancery Proceedings James I, H 8-28; Public Record Office, London.)

#### ABSTRACT OF DEED.

This indenture made the 12 of Feby, 9 Charles I, 1633-4, between Edmund Hawe, alias Hawes, sonne of Edmund Hawe, alias Hawes, of Sollyhull in the County of Warwick, gent., of the one part, & Sir Leventhorpe Franche of Hattefield Bro-docke, Essex, knight, of the other part, Witnesseth that Edmond in consideration of £250 hath sold unto Sir Leventhorpe all the one half which Edmond hath in these freehold lands, that is to say, one messuage called Cuftes, otherwise Coles, with a pasture, in Belchamp S. Paul, Essex, between the highway leading from Ovington toward Sudbury & a yard called Leapers & a crofte sometimes John Freer's & John Neale's, one moiety of two other peeces of land in Belchamp S. Paul between Luckins Lane & the said Highway, & the land called Whitedache, a moiety of Walpooles peece, Whiteditch, Poundfeild als Whiteditch Field, Bremble Croft, one grove now



called Hawkes Wood, sometime Longcroft, etc., with all other lands which Edmond Hawe the younger has in co Essex.

17 Feby., 9 Car. I, Edmond Hawe came into Chancery & acknowledged this deed.

Close Rolls in P. R. O., 10 Car. I, Pt. 1, roll 2997, p. 22.)

EXTRACTS FROM THE RECORDS OF THE WORSHIP-  
FUL COMPANY OF CUTLERS OF THE CITY OF  
LONDON, TOGETHER WITH SOME AC-  
COUNT OF THE COMPANY.

By CHARLES WELCH,

Past Master, Now Engaged Upon a History of It.

Book of Apprentices' Bindings, 1575-1626, p. 106.

"Edmond Hawes filu Edmondi Hawes de Solchull in com. . . .  
...Gent Posuit Edmonde Warnett cs. et Cultelar' London A  
fes. . . . Purificationis vltimo vsq. Octo Annoru' Dat' xiiij<sup>o</sup>  
februarij. . . ."

The above entry was made by a scribe who had a very poor knowledge of the official Latin of the early 17th century. Duly extended in its abbreviations, and with some necessary corrections, it should read as follows:—

Edmond Hawes filius Edmondi Hawes de Solihull in comi-  
tatu Warwicensi generosi posuit se Edmonde Warnett civi  
et Cultellario London. a festo Purificationis Beate Marie Vir-  
ginis vltimo vsque ad terminum octo annorum. Dat. xiiij feb-  
ruarij 1626.

The following is a translation:—

Edmond Hawes son of Edmond Hawes of Solihull in the  
County of Warwick, gentleman, binds himself to Edmond War-  
nett citizen and Cutler of London, from the feast of the Puri-  
fication of the Blessed Virgin Mary last past to the end of the  
term of eight years. Dated the 14th of February, 1626.

N. B. The Feast of the Purification is 2 February. Soli-  
hull is a town in Warwickshire on the Great Western Rail-  
way, 13 miles N. W. of Warwick, 7 miles S. W. of Birming-  
ham, and 122½ miles distant from London. It is pleasantly  
situated and well built.

The above original entry is taken from a book which was damaged seemingly, i.e. at first sight, beyond repair. It is only a fragment of the original, and at present consists of loose leaves awaiting binding. The page (106) given to the entry belongs to a pencil numeration which will probably however be permanently adopted. The arrangement of the book is chronological, and the entry occurs in its due order among those of the year 1626. The fourth letter in the name of the town—Solihull—certainly looks like a “c,” but is evidently meant for an “i.” There is no such place as Solchull.

—:—

Minute Book of the Court of Assistants, 1602-1667, folio 285a:

“A Court Tewesdaye the 9 of December 1634 Annoq. RR. Caroli Anglie &c. decimo Mr. ffrauncis Cob Master, Joseph Rogers and William Poulton Wardens, Mr. William Davis, Mr. Thomas Tuck, Mr. Henry Withers, Mr. Robert South, Mr. Edmund Hutchenson, Mr. Adam Ward, Mr. ffrauncis ffulwell, Thomas Tayler, George Moore, Edward Hynson, Thomas Byewater, William Caue, Thomas Harte, Gabriell Parteridge, Thomas Beedham, John Miller, Robt. fowler

ffreemen sworne

Edmund Hawes the apprentice of Edmund Warnet sworne free Cutler”

### THE CUTLERS' COMPANY

The corporate title of the Company, under its charters, is “The Master, Wardens and Commonalty of the Mistery of Cutlers of London,” but their usual designation at the present day is “The Master, Wardens, and Court of Assistants of the Worshipful Company of Cutlers of the City of London.” The Company existed by prescription from a remote period, but they obtained their first charter from King Henry V in the year 1417 (two years after the victory of Agincourt).

Cutlers' Hall, built in the 15th century, was situated in Cloak Lane, Dowgate Hill. Here it remained for centuries, until it was removed about twenty years ago to Warwick Lane, Newgate Street, the site of the old Hall in Cloak Lane, having been required for the District Railway. The Arms of the Com-

pany date from the 15th century, or perhaps earlier."<sup>u</sup> The present members number about 110, and the number in the 17th century might have been 150, or perhaps more. The wealthiest members of the trade were the bladesmiths or makers of sword blades. But the Company included many other classes, such as the knife-makers, razor-makers, edgetool-makers, grinders, &c., besides the shopkeepers. The Company has no School, but has several Exhibitions to the Universities, and apprentices a large number of boys to the surgical instrument trade. The privileges of a Freeman in this, as in all the City Companies, were of high value in former times (say before 1750); none but Freemen could set up in business in the City of London, the Freemen had the protection of the Company in their trade (all Freemen were also subject to its discipline), and they had a claim upon the Company's charity if they fell into poor circumstances. The privileges of the Liverymen (a higher grade in the Company) were still higher; from them were chosen the Court of Assistants, i.e., the governing body of the Company, and they (the Liverymen) were privileged, with the Liverymen of the other Companies, to elect the Lord Mayor, the Sheriffs, and the Members of Parliament for the City of London. The Livery still have these privileges, and after finishing this note for you I am going today [June 27, 1910] up to Guildhall as a Citizen and Cutler of London to record my vote in a contested election for Sheriffs, a poll having been demanded at the election on Friday last, being Midsummer Day.<sup>m</sup>

#### LETTER TO GOVERNOR AND ASSISTANTS

To the much honord the Govenor and Assistants now assembled in Court att Plimouth.

Wee the brethren of the Church of Christ in Yarmouth whose names are hereunto affixed understanding that Nicolas Nickerson of our towne hath upon occation of a sermon (as we

<sup>u</sup>The arms are: Gules, three pairs of swords in saltire argent, hilts and pommels or, two pairs in chief and one in base. Crest: An elephant's head couped gules, armed or. (There is also another crest carrying elephants.) Motto: Pour parvenir à bonne foy, that is, To reach good faith. (Burke's General Armory, 255.)

<sup>m</sup>The writer visited the hall and inspected the records in the summer of 1911.

gather) that Mr. Thornton preacht from the second comandmt hath spoken certaine words tending to the defammacon & slander of Mr. Thornton and the doctrinall truthes he hath thence taught thereby discouraging him from taking office amongst us: doe signifie that we nor know nor heard any thing delivered by him in that sermon or any other that was not according to the truth—taken in the sence he laid it downe in; according to our best judgment and measure of discerning God hath given us. thus much we have thought it our duty to witnese by our messengers, whom we have desired to speake further unto as occation may be ministred humbly intreating your worships to minde that if men may go on in such waies & calluminate the ministers & dispensers of the word & the doctrine they deliver in these declining times without discountenance the consequence will prove sad.

We remain your worships to be comanded.  
Yarmouth 30. 4. 67.

ANTONY THACHER  
EDMOND HAWES  
WILLIAM LUMPKIN  
JAMES MATHEWES  
JAMES BURSTA (BURSELL)<sup>n</sup>  
JOHN CROW  
RICHARD TAYLOR  
WILLIAM ELDERED  
JOSEPH HOWES  
THO. HOWES  
JEREMIAH HOWES  
JOHN THACHER  
RICHARD SARES (SEARS)  
JOHN MILLER  
HENRY WHELDING

#### WILL OF EDMOND<sup>1</sup> HAWES

In ye Name of God. Amen this 5th day of May 1692: I Edmond Hawes of Yarmouth in y<sup>e</sup> County of Barnestable in New England being aged and under much bodily decay and weakness but of sound memory and disposing mind, praise be

<sup>n</sup>Signature uncertain.

given to God for'ye same, knowing y<sup>e</sup> uncertainty of this Life on earth and being desirous to settle things in order: do make this my Last will and testament in manner and forme following (that is to say) first I committ my soul to god Almighty hopefully believing that I shall Receive full pardon and free Remission of all my sins and be saved by y<sup>e</sup> pretious death and merriits of my Beloved Saviour and Redeemer Jesus Christ; and my Body to y<sup>e</sup> earth from whence it was taken to be buried in such decent and Christian manner as to my executor hereafter named shall be thought meet and convenient and as tuching such worldly estate as ye Lord hath been pleased hetherto: to Lend me my will and meaning ye same shall be Implied and bestowed as hereafter by this my will is expressed; and first I do revoke Renounce and make void all wills by me formerly made and declared and appoint this my Last will and Testament.

2ly I do give and bequeath to my Grandson Joseph Hawes six acres of of my Land (to be laid forth to him at marriage or full age which shall first happen) so as it may Lij next to Capt. Thachers or John Hallets Land and Abut up on y<sup>e</sup> highway and also y<sup>e</sup> one halfe of my Island of Sedg or crick thatch Land which Lyies in y<sup>e</sup> Lone tree crick the which sd Island being divided in too equal devitions my son John Hawes to have his choice first: And also I do give to ye sd Joseph priviledg to driy thatch upon that meadow at Lone tree; And also I do give to ye sd Joseph one acre of my meadow where his father shall see cause to lay it forth to him; all which sd six acres of Land and half of sd Island priviledg of drying thatch and one acre of meadow I do give to him y<sup>e</sup> sd Joseph Hawes his heirs and assignes for ever.

3ly I do give and bequeath unto my Natural<sup>o</sup> son John Hawes all my uplands & meadows and broken marshes or creek thatch Land wheresoever within y<sup>e</sup> Township of Yarmouth or else where to have and to hold to him his heirs and assignes for ever.

---

<sup>o</sup>At the date of this will the word "natural," used of a child, did not mean illegitimate. It meant a child by nature, an own child, opposed to an adopted child, a son or daughter in law, etc. The sense of illegitimacy came into use later. (Century Dictionary; Murray's New English Dictionary, p. 37 of letter "N"; legal documents of the period both in England and America.)

4ly I do give and bequeath to my Loving Daughter Desire Hawes y<sup>e</sup> wife of my s<sup>d</sup> son John Hawes one cow and calf and my great Brass kettle and my Brass mortar and pestle with all my household stuff; only my Bed with all thereto belonging I do give to my grand Daughter Desire Hawes and one ewe sheep.

5ly I do give to my Grand Daughter Elizabeth Dogged one cow.

6ly. I do give to my Grand Daughter Mary Bacon on cow.

7ly. I do give to my Grand son Jabez Hawes one cow and to my Grand son John Hawes I do give and bequeath one two year old and one young horse if his Brother Edmond dont comagain; but if Edmond his Brother do come againe I do give sd young horse to him and to my Grand son Ebenezer Hawes I do give one yearling; and to my two grand children Isaac and Benjamin I do give to each of them one calf; and to my Grandchild Experience I do give one sheep; and ye Rest of my sheep my will is that my executor do devide them to my great grand children in such proportions as he shall think fitt; And I do give and bequeath to John Hathaway of Yarmouth thirty shillings wich he oweth to me by a bill I have of his hand.

And lastly I do make ordaine costitute and appointe my well Beloved son John Hawes to be sole executor to this my Last will and Testament: In Witness whereof I y<sup>e</sup> sd Edmond Hawes have hereunto sett my hand and seal y<sup>e</sup> day and year first above written.

EDMOND HAWES [Seal]

Signed sealed and declared

in presence of

JOHN THACHER

LYDIA THACHER

John Thacher and Lydia Thacher whose Names are sett as witnesses to this will made oath that they did see the above sd Edmond Hawes deceased signe and seal and heard him declare this to be his Last will and Testament before Barnabas Lothrop Esq<sup>r</sup>. Judg of y<sup>e</sup> probate of Wills and granting Administration July y<sup>e</sup> 20th 1698.

Attest JOSEPH LOTHROP *Register*.

Be it knowne that I the sd Edmond Hawes on the other side mentioned upon my further consideration do order and declare and my will is that y<sup>e</sup> within on y<sup>e</sup> other side mentioned six acres of Land given and bequeathed unto my Grand son Joseph Hawes there mentioned to Ly next adjoyning to John Hallets on y<sup>e</sup> west side of my Land or next to John Thacher on y<sup>e</sup> east side be Determined and settled on which side his ffather pleaseth; and further my will is that in case his ffather my son John Hawes in Leue of this sd six acres of Land do give him y<sup>e</sup> sd Joseph six acres of Land in som other place to ye sd Josephs Liking that then this sd six acres in my will given to Joseph shall be my son Johns and his heirs forever as ye Rest of my Land is; by my will on y<sup>e</sup> other side is given.

In witness to this codicil I y<sup>e</sup> sd Edmond Hawes being yet of disposing mind Blessed be God have sett to my hand and seal y<sup>e</sup> 31: day of March 1693.<sup>p</sup>

EDMOND HAWES [Seal]

This above written was signed sealed  
and declared before us

JOHN THACHER

LYDIA THACHER

### INVENTORY OF EDMOND<sup>1</sup> HAWES

An Inventory of ye Lands Chattels goods credits and debts of Mr. Edmond Hawes of Yarmouth in y<sup>e</sup> County of Barnestable deceased taken and apprized this first day of August 1693 by us whose Names are under written

To house Lands and meadowss att	100-00-00
To five cowes	008-00-00
one 3 year old heifer one 2 year old heifer	002-06-00
two-yearlings and one Bull and 2 calves	002-05-00
five sheep and one Lamb	001-05-00
one young horse	001-00-00

<sup>p</sup>Article on Provincial Seals in Mass., 37 N. E. Reg., 349-358, at pp. 356 & 357 (Barnstable County): "All the court and probate files of this county were lost in the fire which consumed the court house at Barnstable on the night of October 22, 1827. Fortunately, however, most of the books of probate records were saved, and in the first volume of these, Barnabas Lothrop, the first Judge of Probate for this county, not only made the first record of a letter testamentary (will of Edmond Hawes, Sept. 2, 1693), but affixed his seal thereto in wax. This impression is shown in No. 22."

To bed bolster Blankets sheets and coverlids and bedstead	005-00-00
To wearing apparil wollin and Linnin and money	004-10-00
To a Bible and other books	000-10-00
To fire slice and Tonges 2 chaires and one chest all att	000-15-00
To a Brass kittle mortar and pestle and 3 pewter dishes	003-07-00
To an Iron Trammil 3 Iron wedges Augurs and old chests	000-09-00
To old share and Coulter chaine and other small things	001-00-00
	<hr/>
	130-07-00

Debts due from y<sup>e</sup> estate upon y<sup>e</sup> Ballance of Accounts to  
his son John Hawes for diat and tendance 29-03-00.

Debts due to ye estate from several persons 02-02.

JOHN THACHER

JOHN MILLER

Ensigne John Hawes made oath to y<sup>e</sup> truth of this Inven-  
tory before Barnabas Lothrop Esq. Judg of y<sup>e</sup> probate of  
Wills and granting Administration August y<sup>e</sup> 2d, 1693.

Attest: JOSEPH LOTHROP, *Register*.

VERSES that appeared in the *Birmingham* (England)  
*Weekly Post* of March 9, 1912, doubtless suggested by the  
compiler's article on The English Ancestors of Edmond Hawes  
in the *New England Historical and Genealogical Register* (vol.  
65, p. 160).

#### THE DEPARTURE OF EDMOND HAWES FROM SOLIHULL

"Here sojourners from days of old,  
In heaven citizens." Unfold

The memories of dear youth. Recall  
The words upon the Hillfield Hall,

The silver chevron set between  
the leopards' faces golden sheen.



Not lord, as all thy fathers were,  
That Brome and Greswolde mated there,

But younger son, apprentice bound,  
A cutler in the daily round ;

A sojourner that seeks to find  
The City in the heavens reclined.

In England, land beloved, men have  
No leave to worship God. The wave

That bounds, doth bear o'er seas afar  
Its sons who must serve God. The star

Of faith doth lead, and down the west  
Thou go'st whom God hath called and blest.

Now speeds the good ship "James." The roar  
Of breakers on New England shore,

Is song most sweet, and o'er the strand  
Thou walkest as on holy land.

E. M. RUDLAND.

From "Ballads of Old Birmingham," second series.

## SECOND GENERATION

2 JOHN<sup>2</sup> (Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes, b. —; m. Oct. 7, 1661, at Barnstable, Desire Gorham (b. at Plymouth Apr. 2, 1644).<sup>q</sup> She was the eldest child of Capt. John Gorham of fame in King Philip's War and Desire (Howland) his wife, and granddaughter of John Howland and Elizabeth (Tilley) his wife, both passengers on the Mayflower. He was married in 1661 and doubtless not before he was of age, and so must have been born not later than 1640. He is not treated as a minor in the trial mentioned below and so was no doubt of age March 5, 1660-1. Joseph Rogers, Jr., of Eastham, who had lived in Duxbury and had no doubt been his playmate there, and with whom he had a friendly scuffle in Eastham in December, 1660, was born July 19, 1635.<sup>r</sup> They could not have differed much in age. We may, therefore, place the birth of John<sup>2</sup> Hawes between 1635 and 1640, possibly in England, but probably in America and most likely in Duxbury. The scuffle referred to was probably a wrestling match,<sup>s</sup> and in it Hawes had the misfortune of injuring Rogers so that he died. He was tried and acquitted for causing his death, as we shall see. That he suffered no discredit on account of the sad affair is shown not only by his subsequent career, but by the fact that seven months after his trial he married a daughter of Capt. John Gorham, of Barnstable. On March 5, 1660-1, a court was convened at Plymouth

"Before Thomas Prence, Gou <sup>r</sup> ,	Thomas Southworth,
William Collyare,	William Bradford, and
John Aldin,	Thomas Hinckley,
Josias Winslow,	Assistants, etc."

In the proceedings the following entry appears: "Att this Court, John Hawes, of Yarmouth, was indited for violently and by force of armes takeing away the life of Joseph Rogers,

<sup>q</sup>Barn. Recs.; 5 Mf. 72; 1 Otis, 413, 414.

<sup>r</sup>3 Savage, 564.

<sup>s</sup>47 N. E. Reg. 341; Swift, 88, 89.

of Eastham, by giving him a most deadly fall, on the 25 of December, 1660, in the towne of Eastham, whereof and whereupon hee did most vehemently complaine, and about 48 houres after died. The said John Hawes did put himself upon tryall by God and the Countrey. The grand jury found the bill of inditement a true bill. The names of the petty jury, or jury of life and death, that had the tryall of this case, as followeth:

sworne,	Mr. Josias Winslow, Seni <sup>r</sup> , Leiftenant James Torrey, Robert Finney, Cornett Robert Studson, Ephraim Morton, Samuell Hickes, William Paybody, Samuell Sturtevant, Ephraim Tinkham, Steven Bryant, John Sutton, Benjamine Bartlett.
---------	--

These brought in a verdict wherein they expressed that they found that the said John Hawes was not guilty, and soe according to law hee was cleared in the open Court and released."<sup>13</sup> The jurymen were nearly all from Plymouth or the region north of it. Mr. Winslow, who was a brother of Gov. Edward Winslow, was from Marshfield. March 4, 1661-2, "John Hawes for relateing a scandalous report, for which hee hath not produced sufficient ground for it, is fined ten shillings."<sup>14</sup> June 3, 1668, he was appointed by the General Court of the Colony receiver of excise for Yarmouth.<sup>15</sup> June 1, 1669, he was on the grand jury.<sup>16</sup> May 29, 1670, he was one of the freeman of Yarmouth.<sup>17</sup> March 8, 1670-1, John Gray was fined three shillings and four pence "for breaking the Kinges peace in striking of John Hawes."<sup>18</sup> In 1676 his tax was three pounds 10 shillings and 6 pence out of the total for the town

<sup>13</sup> Plym. Col. Recs., 205.

<sup>14</sup> *ib.* 11.

<sup>15</sup> *ib.* 183.

<sup>16</sup> *ib.* 18.

<sup>17</sup> *ib.* 276.

<sup>18</sup> *ib.* 53.

of 297 pounds.<sup>a</sup> June 5, 1677, he is mentioned as constable of Yarmouth,<sup>a</sup> and June 1, 1680, as one of the surveyors of highways for that town.<sup>b</sup> July 10, 1677, he was one of the two appointed for Yarmouth "to see the orders about and against the abuse of drinke and liquors put in execution."<sup>c</sup> July 25, 1678, he was a witness to the will of Capt. Matthew Fuller, of Barnstable.<sup>d</sup> Oct. 29, 1678, Oct. 27, 1680, and April 5, 1692, he was on a jury.<sup>e</sup> In 1680 he was one of four men who for four or five pounds a whale (according to circumstances), to be paid in blubber or oil, were "to look out for and secure the town all such whales as by God's providence shall be cast up in their several bounds," his territory being the western part of the town.<sup>f</sup> Oct. 31, 1682, he was appointed ensign of the military Company of Yarmouth.<sup>g</sup> About 1700 he became captain of the Company and the town records then style him "Capt." In 1683 he was indebted to the estate of his mother-in-law, Desire Gorham, for five pounds silver money borrowed of her.<sup>h</sup> March 22, 1685-6, he was a witness to a deed of Elisha Hedge, of Yarmouth, to Nicholas Eldredge, of Monomoy, conveying land in the latter place.<sup>i</sup> Aug. 9, 1689, he was a witness to the will of Thomas Boardman of Yarmouth.<sup>j</sup> The town records of Yarmouth show that in 1693 he was one of a committee to choose a schoolmaster. In 1698 his tax was 4 pounds 9 shillings and 5 pence.<sup>k</sup> In 1693 and 1696 he with others was appointed to settle and run the boundary line between Yarmouth and Barnstable. In 1693, 1694 and 1696 he was chosen to serve on the jury. In 1698 he and two others were elected tithingmen. March 12, 1700-1, he was chosen to serve as grand jurymen, and March 19 the same year he was appointed with two others to draw up a list of proprietors

<sup>a</sup>Swift, 104; 2 Freeman 195.

<sup>b</sup>5 Plym. Col. Recs., 231.

<sup>c</sup>6 ib. 42.

<sup>d</sup>Plym. Col. Laws, 244, 245.

<sup>e</sup>13 Mf. 9.

<sup>f</sup>7 Plym. Col. Recs., 214, 231, 233, 312.

<sup>g</sup>Swift, 109, 110.

<sup>h</sup>6 Plym. Col. Recs., 97.

<sup>i</sup>4 Plym. Col. Wills (pt. 2) 63; 4 Mf. 220.

<sup>j</sup>Thos. Doane papers.

<sup>k</sup>1 Barn. Prob. Recs. 27; 10 Mf. 102.

<sup>l</sup>Files 4600; Rec. Book, 1686-1700, p. 297.

of the common lands in Yarmouth. He was chosen a representative in the Legislature at Boston in 1697 and 1698.<sup>1</sup> From the published edition of the Province Laws (vol. 7, pp. 149, 181) it appears that in the latter year he did not take or subscribe the qualifying oaths and so probably did not serve. He served in 1697. Swift's Old Yarmouth (p. 236), 2 Freeman's Cape Cod (p. 239) and Deyo's Barnstable County (p. 476) erroneously make him a representative in 1696. In that year Thomas Sturgis was chosen (7 Prov. Laws, 105, and town records). The Book of Grants of Yarmouth (p. 20) shows that the town granted to him Feb. 26, 1672-3, the "broken marsh" on the W. side of the mouth of Lone Tree Creek near land already owned by him and the land of Edmond Hawes and John Miller, and (p. 101) that Feb. 23, 1684-5, he was granted 10 acres on the N. side of Dennis pond near Hallett's land. From the same book (pp. 164 & 165) it appears that the bounds of "about 16 acres or more" of his land were fixed by John Thacher, Jeremiah Howes and John Miller March 22, 1693-4, and that all but a small portion of it "for aboute thirty years now past has been in the possession of the said John Hawes." This tract was thus granted to him, probably by the town, shortly after his marriage. After his father died and probably before, he occupied the former's house. His wife died June 30, 1700. He died Nov. 11, 1701, from the effect of having his leg amputated.<sup>m</sup> Whether amputation was occasioned by accident or disease is not known. The fact is referred to in these words in the preamble to his will: "Being by the hand of god brought very low and weake in body." His death from the amputation is not to be wondered at, considering the state of surgery at the time and indeed the probable lack of medical assistance of any kind. He left a will, dated Oct. 15 and proved Nov. 19, 1701,<sup>n</sup> in which he mentions his sons John, Joseph, Ebenezer, Isaac and Benjamin, and his daughters Elizabeth Dogget, Mary Bacon, De-

<sup>1</sup>Yar. Town Recs.

<sup>m</sup>Yar. Recs.; 1 Otis, 413, 414; 2 Freeman, 206; 5 Mf. 177, entry in a memorandum book by Col. John Gorham, grandnephew of Desire (Gorham) Hawes. Referring to the children of Capt. John Gorham, one item is: "Desire—Gorham—maryed a Capt. Hawes Yarmouth—having his Leg Cut of Dyed with It."

<sup>n</sup>2 Barn. Prob. Recs., 135; copy, p. 151, *infra*.

sire and Experience Hawes. He named his sons Joseph and Isaac as executors and requested his "loving brothers Major John Goreham<sup>o</sup> and John Thacher<sup>p</sup> Esqr. to be overseers to see the true execution of this my Will." The inventory of his estate, taken Nov. 28, 1701,<sup>q</sup> deducting "desperate debts" and debts due from the estate, amounted to 575 pounds and 11 pence, including 300 pounds for real estate, 41 pounds for "2 negro girls" and 5 pounds for an "Indian boy."

*Children, all born in Yarmouth.\**

ELIZABETH, b. Oct. 5, 1662; m.<sup>o</sup> Jan. 22, 1683-4, at Bristol (now in R. I.), Thomas Doggett (or Daggett); removed to Edgartown; d. between Dec. 25, 1732, and Feb. 15, 1732-3. He d. Aug. 23, 1726. They had issue.<sup>†</sup>

MARY, b. June 10, 1664; m. June 17, 1686, John<sup>2</sup> (Nathaniel<sup>1</sup>) Bacon, of Barnstable; d. March 5, 1725-6.<sup>‡</sup> For their children, see 2 Mf. 215, and 1 Otis, 31-37. John<sup>2</sup> Bacon was a lawyer. He became judge of the Court of Common Pleas and held other offices. He m. 2d Sept. 29, 1726, Mrs. Sarah Warren, of Plymouth, and d. Aug. 20, 1731.<sup>§</sup>

3 EDMOND, b. May 2, 1669.

4 JOHN, b. May 14, 1671.

5 JOSEPH, b. July 16, 1673.

6 JABEZ, b. May 20, 1675; mentioned in his grandfather's will and not stated to be deceased in his codicil, but not mentioned in his father's will; therefore, no doubt died between March 31, 1693, and Oct. 15, 1701, and probably unmarried. He probably died before Sept. 13, 1700, when his brother Ebenezer named his first child Jabez.

<sup>o</sup>His wife's brother.

<sup>p</sup>Married his wife's sister Lydia.

<sup>q</sup>2 Barn. Prob. Recs., 135; copy, p. 153, *infra*.

<sup>r</sup>Yarmouth Recs.; 2 Mf. 207. The record states that Elizabeth was 13 years old Oct. 5, 1674. This would make her birth come in 1661 before the marriage of her parents. The original records had been burned and the present record was an attempt to supply the loss from memory. Her birth must have been in 1662 and is so given by the late Wm. P. Davis and by Austin in his "Allied Families," p. 106.

<sup>s</sup>6 Vital Recs. of R. I., 17, 26.

<sup>†</sup>See Doggett-Daggett Family, by S. B. Doggett, 87, 88.

<sup>‡</sup>Barn. Recs.; 1 Otis 33.

7 EBENEZER, b. March 24, 1678-9.

8 ISAAC, b. March 9, 1679-80.

DESIRE, b. last of February, 1681-2; m.<sup>e</sup> Feb. 24, 1701-2, Josiah<sup>4</sup> (Samuel,<sup>3</sup> Walter,<sup>2</sup> William<sup>1</sup>) Hatch, of Scituate. For their children, see will of Samuel<sup>3</sup> Hatch (5 Mf. 112). He died in Rochester Jan. 12, 1714-15, aged 34 years.<sup>o</sup> She was appointed administratrix March 30, 1715,<sup>e</sup> She m. 2d John Cowing<sup>y</sup> "of the precinct of Cape Cod"<sup>u</sup> after April 29, 1718, as of which date she is mentioned as widow of Hatch, and before May 12, 1721, when she is described as Desire Cowing in a deed of land in Rochester in which John Cowing joined.<sup>a</sup> She died before May 1, 1724, when he was appointed administrator *de bonis non* of Josiah Hatch's estate.<sup>b</sup>

9 BENJAMIN, b. March 20, 1682-3.

EXPERIENCE, b. Sept. 24, 1686; m.<sup>e</sup> March 1, 1703-4, Ebenezer<sup>2</sup> (Robert<sup>1</sup>) Sprout,<sup>d</sup> of Scituate, who later removed to Middleborough.<sup>e</sup> He d.<sup>f</sup> Sept. 28, 1726, leaving a wife, two sons and three daughters.<sup>g</sup> She m. 2d before Sept. 28, 1732, Francis Miller, who was then appointed guardian of her two sons.<sup>h</sup> He d. between Oct. 29, 1746, and April 6, 1747, leaving a will naming his wife, Experience, and three brothers.<sup>i</sup> She d. Nov. 19, 1758.<sup>j</sup> One of her sons, James Sprout, graduated at Yale College in 1741 and was a clergyman.<sup>k</sup> Her son, Ebenezer Sprout, was a prominent man in Middleborough, and the latter's son, Col. Ebenezer Sprout, fought in the Revolu-

<sup>e</sup>Yar. Recs.

<sup>o</sup>Hatch Geneal. by Bent.

<sup>e</sup>Plym. Co. Prob. Recs.

<sup>y</sup>The name was also written "Cowen."

<sup>u</sup>Afterward Provincetown (2 Freeman, 617, 628).

<sup>a</sup>28 Plym. Co. Deeds. 129.

<sup>b</sup>4 Plym. Co. Prob. Recs., 398. She d. Feb. 8, 1723-4, (Provincetown, Gr. St.).

<sup>e</sup>Yar. Recs.

<sup>d</sup>Also written "Sproat."

<sup>f</sup>Deane's Scituate, 340; will of Robert Sprout, 3 Plym. Co. Wills, 222.

<sup>g</sup>First Church of Middleborough, 54, 85, 90.

<sup>h</sup>5 Plym. Co. Wills, 274, 275.

<sup>i</sup>6 ib. 232, 233.

<sup>j</sup>10 ib. 440.

tionary War, m. in Providence, R. I., and was later one of the first and leading settlers in Ohio.<sup>1</sup>

Taken as a whole the family of John<sup>2</sup> and Desire (Gorham) Hawes, consisting of eleven children, seven sons and four daughters (nine of whom are accounted for in later life), not because of number merely, but for activity and prominence in life, must be regarded as one of the most remarkable in the early history of the region that had formed the Plymouth colony. Among their children Joseph attained the greatest age, 79, and Experience lived farthest into the 18th century, 1758. As a family they did not attain to a great age.

#### WILL OF JOHN<sup>2</sup> HAWES.

In the name of God Amen the fifteenth day of October 1701 In the thirteenth year of the Reign of William the third by the Grace of God King of England &c. I, John Hawes of the Town of Yarmouth In the County of Barnstable In New England being by the hand of god brought very low and weake in body but of good and perfect memory thanks be to god and knowing the uncertainty of this Life on earth do make this my Last will and Testament In maner and forme following Revoaking anulling and by these presents making void all Wills by me formerly made and declare and appoint this my last Will and Testament and first I comitt my soule to god hoping for the full and free pardon of all my sins by the death and merits of Jesus Christ my only Redeemer and my body to the earth from whence it was taken to be buried in such decent and Christian maner as to my executors hereafter named shall be thought meet and convenient and for the settleing of my temporall estate and all such Lands goods chattels and debts as it hath pleased god to bestow upon me I do order give & dispose In maner and form following that is to say first I will that all these debts and dutys as I owe in Right or consience to any person whatsoever shall be will and truly paid by my executors hereafter named

Itm I give and bequeath unto my son Isaac all my dwelling house and barn together with one acre of Land where & upon

<sup>1</sup>Weston's Hist. of Middleborough, 322-325; 5 Appletons' Cycl. of Am. Biog., 640.



which the sd houseing stand and so to be sett forth as may be most convenient thereto To have and to hold unto him the sd Isaac his heires and assigns forever Excepting and Reserving to my two unmarried daughters desire and experience lyberty to dwell in the eastmost end of my dwelling house and to have the benifitt of the chimney for firing so much as is needfull for them and to enjoy it so long as they have need att the discession of my overseers hereafter named and it is my will that my sd son Isaac do peaceably allow them to enjoy the same.

It I do give and bequeath unto my son Ebenezer eight acres of my land at the west side next to John Hallets foure acres thereof to be laid forth below the highway and it shall extend from the fences next the highway north to the creek yt bounds my meadow next to Major Thachers and the other foure acres he shall have laid out to him of my land above the sd highway and that shall Run from the fence next the sd waye to ye head of my land and also that peice of creek thatch land of myn lying on the north side of the lone tree creek and he shall and may drye and make the fother he cutts off the same upon the drying ground on the knowles so that he use or make use of but one third part thereof all which sd land meadow and premises shall be to him my sd son Ebenezer his heires and assigns To have and To hold forever

It I give and bequeath unto my two sons Joseph and Isaac all the Rest of my land and meadow to be equally divided betwixt them that is to say Joseph shall have one halfe of my land and meadow except what is disposed as above sd. To have and to hold to him his heires and assigns forever and Isaac shall have the other halfe of my land and meadow except as aforesd To have and To hold to him his heires and assigns forever.

It I do give and bequeath unto my daughter Desire my second best bed bolster and all other furniture thereto belonging

It I do give and bequeath unto my Daughter Experience one good cow

It I give to my son Joseph my long gun or fowling peice and my other two guns I give one to my son Ebenezer and the other to my son Isaac and my gold Ring I do give to my sd son Joseph and my cane

It I do give to my daughter Mary Bacon my small gold Ring

It I give and bequeath unto my two sons John and Benjamin and my foure daughters Elizabeth Dogget and Mary Bacon Desire and Experience all the Rest of my moveable estate all my Debts & funerall charges being first paid out of it both within doors and without of what nature kinde or quallity soever it is to be equally divided to each one of them a like share or part thereof thereof, as also all such debts as are due and owing to me from any pson whatsoever shall also be divided as above sd

Lastly I do nominate ordaine and appoint my two sons Joseph and Isaac joynt executors to this my last Will and Testament I also Request my loving brothers Major John Goreham and John Thatcher Esq<sup>r</sup>. to be overseers to see the true execution of this my Will. In Witness whereof I have hereunto sett my hand and seale the day & year above written.

Signed sealed and Declared

JOHN HAWES (seale)

In presence of us Witnesses

John Thacher

Peter Thacher

Josiah Thacher

### INVENTORY OF JOHN<sup>2</sup> HAWES

A true Inventory of all and singular the Goods Chattels Lands and Credits of Capt. John Hawes Deseazed praized the the 28th day of November 1701 by John Thacher Esq<sup>r</sup> and Josiah Thacher as followeth:

Imp <sup>s</sup> his apparel money plate Gold rings and Cane	21-16-11
Arms and amunition	05-01-02
His wives Apparill	09-15-06
2 Long tables formes stools Chears looking glasses & purses	05-03-02
6 beds bolsters pillows bedsteds and furniture to them belonging	27-11-00
Sheets, table lining pillow coats	04-17-06
Lumber in the kitchen Chamber and parlour cham- ber	00-19-06

154 ANCESTORS AND DESCENDANTS OF EDMOND HAWES

2 small tables Chest boxes Cubbert glass bottles and Knives	02-15-06
In the Liento Chamber and celler old Caske & other Lumber at	00-11-00
boxes 19 <sup>s</sup> : 1 <sup>d</sup> : cross cutt saw hand saw and other tools & 7 bells all	02-01-04
Razour hone and box 4 <sup>s</sup> a hatt brush 1 <sup>s</sup> meale sives & Rundlett	00-11-06
Corn in the house and Creebs indian and English	10-06-06
pewter 6:19:2 brass 5:8:3: Iron ware 3:14:8: all	16-02-01
tin ware 6 <sup>s</sup> :9 <sup>d</sup> earthen ware 4 <sup>s</sup> :10 <sup>d</sup> Lanthorns 5 <sup>s</sup>	00-16-07
More Iron ware £1:11 <sup>s</sup> :6 <sup>d</sup> spinning wheels & herds 15 <sup>s</sup>	02-06-06
In the liento trays pailles and trenchers	00-09-06
In the buttery trays tubbs churne and tallow	01-07-06
More puter 5 <sup>s</sup> : money Skales box & waights 5 <sup>s</sup> and bags 4 <sup>s</sup>	00-14-00
319 pound of porke 4:2:11 Sadles bridles horse- gears &c	06-00-05
Draft chains chapes and pins and other Iron tackl- ing and old Iron	01-16-11
Sythes Sneads and rings axes siccles and well bucket and rope	01-08-00
pitchforks and Rakes 7 <sup>s</sup> : cart and wheels yokes and Irons belonging to them	02-10-00
plows and Iron 1-18 flax 10 <sup>s</sup> chees press 7 <sup>s</sup> a can- dlestick	02-15-06
A Canoo 12 <sup>s</sup> : a Lader and grinstone	00-16-00
Shingles boards and boults	02-14-01
2 negro girls £41: Indian boy £5	46-00-00
6 oxen 15 cows and 29 young cattle & halfe a year- ling	90-13-06
2 horses one mare £3: 15 <sup>s</sup> 8 swine £1: 18 <sup>s</sup>	05-13-00
A paire of fetters broad ax and spade att	00-13-06
	<hr/> 274-07-08
Debts due to the estate	47-05-08
Desperate Debts	07-15-00
Housing Lands and meadows att	300-00-00
	<hr/> 629-08-04

Debts due from the estate	34-05-01
More Debts due from the estate	07-00-00
More to be deducted from the estate	05-02-10
More due from the estate	00-06-00
More due to the estate	00-09-06

JOHN THACHER  
JOSIAH THACHER.

### THIRD GENERATION.

3 EDMOND<sup>3</sup> (John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) HAWES, b. May 2, 1669. It is not known whether he married nor when nor where he died. He was absent when his grandfather's will was made, May 5, 1692, and was given a legacy in case he returned: "to my grandson John Hawes I do give and bequeath one two year old and one young horse if his Brother Edmond dont comagain; but if Edmond his Brother do come againe I do give sd young horse to him." He is not mentioned in the will of his father Oct. 15, 1701. It is thought he may have gone to England. On the other hand March 13, 1706-7, the Chatham records (vol. 1, p. 133) say that "edmen hase" was chosen one of the selectmen with Thomas Atkins and Daniel Hamilton. The name of his brother Isaac is sometimes written "Hase" in the Chatham records. There was no one in the town of the name of Hayes, and it has been thought that this was Edmond<sup>3</sup> Hawes.<sup>\*</sup> If so, he again disappears and is not heard from further. Freeman, v. 2, p. 614, makes the selectman Edmund *Howes*, and so does Deyo (p. 592), but there was no Edmond *Howes* at the time.<sup>†</sup> The town clerk, however, at this time was William<sup>2</sup> Nickerson, who had known Edmond<sup>1</sup> Hawes in Yarmouth, and upon meeting his grandson, who no doubt was commonly called "Eben," may have mistaken the name for Edmond. The two following years, with a different clerk, the names are entered as Thomas Atkins, Daniel Hamilton and Ebenezer Hawes, and there can be no doubt that it was Ebenezer and not Edmond who was chosen on the first mentioned occasion.<sup>‡</sup>

4 JOHN<sup>3</sup> (John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) HAWES, b. May 14, 1671; m. first, Mary —, before March 14, 1708-9, when she acknowl-

<sup>\*</sup>Smith's Chatham, 159.

<sup>†</sup>Howes Geneal. by Joshua C. Howes, 204.

<sup>‡</sup>Mr. Smith, after further examination of the record, reaches this conclusion.

edged a deed executed by him,\* and second Mary Mason of Rehoboth, Nov. 26, 1723;<sup>o</sup> d. in Providence, R. I., Dec. 27, 1723.<sup>p</sup> His widow m., as his second wife, John Dexter, of Providence, Oct. 17, 1728, and d. Feb., 1754, leaving no children.<sup>o</sup> John<sup>s</sup> Hawes was in Providence before May 30, 1700, when he (described as of Providence) sued Thomas Field, Jr., for expenses incurred in defending a suit brought against him by Field.<sup>q</sup> He had bought 25 acres of land in Providence of John Corp, which he conveyed by deed, dated Feb. 16, 1708-9, to John Wheaton for the consideration of 54 pounds 10s. current silver money. He is here described as shoemaker.<sup>r</sup> His dwelling is mentioned June 4, 1708, in the division of the land of Thomas Relph.<sup>s</sup> He later became an innkeeper, being licensed to keep a tavern or ale house and paying annually for the privilege from one pound to one pound ten shillings. In 1712 or 1713 he paid 10s. to the executors of Jabez Howland, of Bristol.<sup>t</sup> He was on a coroner's jury Dec. 30, 1713, and is styled Mr.<sup>u</sup> June 7, 1714, he was chosen one of the "way wardens."<sup>v</sup> There are sundry other mentions of him in the Providence records. Joshua Hempstead, of New London, on a journey to Boston stopped at his inn the night of Oct. 11, 1717, at the expense of about 2s. 6d.<sup>w</sup> His younger son John was appointed his administrator Jan. 8, 1723-4, his widow, Mary, and his eldest son, Edmond, having declined. The inventory of his estate filed on the same date amounted to 524 pounds 12 shillings and 3 pence.<sup>x</sup>

\*2 Prov. Deeds, 131. In the acknowledgment she is described as his "now wife," which would seem to imply that she was his second wife. On the other hand, in his inventory certain undisposed of wearing apparel is stated to have been his first wife's, and this could hardly have belonged to a wife who died before March 14, 1708-9.

<sup>o</sup>General. of Sampson Mason Fam., 17; Rehoboth Vital Recs., 197, 247, 447, 459, 464, where the name is erroneously House; 1 Prov. Births, etc., 20.

<sup>p</sup>16 Early Recs. of Prov., 306, 312.

<sup>q</sup>17 ib. 178.

<sup>r</sup>2 Prov. Deeds, 131.

<sup>s</sup>7 Early Recs. of Prov., 198.

<sup>t</sup>7 Mf. 202.

<sup>u</sup>9 Early Rec. of Prov., 1, 2.

<sup>v</sup>11 ib., 174.

<sup>w</sup>Diary of Joshua Hempstead, 69.

<sup>x</sup>16 Early Prov. Recs., 306, 308, 312, 313; 12 ib. 74.

*Children, probably b. in Providence:*

EDMOND, b.

JOHN, b.

Perhaps others.

EDMOND<sup>4</sup> (John,<sup>8</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) HAWES, b. ;  
 m. first, May 8, 1722, Mary<sup>8</sup> (Edward,<sup>2</sup> William<sup>1</sup>) Hawkins of  
 Providence.<sup>y</sup> She was the daughter of Anne , Edward's  
 second wife, and was b. Dec. 11, 1690. Edward Hawkins  
 d. between Apr. 16 (date of will) and July 7 (date of probate),  
 1726. He mentions his daughter, Mary Hawes, and makes  
 his son-in-law, Edmond Hawes, executor.<sup>z</sup> Mary Hawes prob-  
 ably d. between March 6, 1732-3, when she joined with her hus-  
 band in a deed,<sup>a</sup> and Sept. 14, 1733, when he made the convey-  
 ance to her mother noted below. Edmond<sup>4</sup> Hawes probably  
 married a second time, as stated below (p. 161). With John  
 Dexter, Jr., and Richard Waterman, Jr., he witnessed the will  
 of Jonathan Whipple, of Providence, Sept. 5, 1721.<sup>b</sup> Feb.  
 22, 1724-5, Edmond Hawes and his wife, for a consideration  
 of 107 pounds, conveyed land in Providence to John Hawes,  
 described as joiner and as his brother, part of which had be-  
 longed to their father John, deceased.<sup>c</sup> By deed dated Oct.  
 22, 1725, Edmond Hawes, of Providence, blacksmith, conveyed  
 land in that town to his brother John Hawes, of the same  
 place, innholder, for a consideration of 13 pounds current  
 money.<sup>d</sup> By deed dated Nov. 15, 1728, he conveyed land in  
 Providence to John Hawkins, Jr., carpenter, of the same place.<sup>e</sup>  
 Dec. 13, 1728, describing himself as of Providence, he con-  
 veyed 10 acres there to John Page, of the same place, husband-  
 man.<sup>f</sup> Soon after this he removed to Smithfield. Dec. 25,  
 1731, Edmond Hawes and Edward Evans, both of Smithfield,  
 conveyed land in Providence to Peter Aldrich, of Smithfield,  
 for the consideration of 24 pounds.<sup>g</sup> March 6, 1732-3, Ed-

<sup>y</sup>1 Prov. Births, etc., 31.<sup>z</sup>Prov. Prob. Recs.; Austin's Geneal. Dict. of R. I., 318, 319.<sup>a</sup>1 Smithfield Deeds, 102.<sup>b</sup>16 Early Recs. of Prov., 188.<sup>c</sup>6 Prov. Deeds, 438.<sup>d</sup>Ib. 440.<sup>e</sup>8 Ib. 43.<sup>f</sup>4 Smithfield Deeds, 124.<sup>g</sup>9 Prov. Deeds, 374.

mond Hawes, blacksmith, of Smithfield, for the consideration of 700 pounds current money of New England, conveyed the homestead farm on which he then dwelt in Smithfield, containing about 100 acres, to Elisha Smith, of the same place, yeoman. Mary, his wife, released her dower.<sup>3</sup> Sept. 14, 1733, describing himself as of Smithfield, he conveyed to his mother-in-law, Anne Hawkins, widow, in consideration of love and good-will to her and for her comfortable support and maintenance, all his goods and chattels except his tools for smith work, including three cows, three horses, five swine and his household goods.<sup>4</sup> At some time after this and before the date of the next following deed, he removed to Stratford, Conn., where Joseph Gorham, his father's cousin, had preceded him.<sup>5</sup> By deed dated Dec. 13, and recorded Dec. 17, 1739, Samuel Wheeler, of Stratford, for the consideration of 13 pounds and 10 shillings, conveyed to Edmond Hawes, of the same place, three-fourths of an acre of land bounded E. on Wheeler's land, in which it is said: "ye said Edmund Haws his dwelling house is in the S. E. corner of sd. land."<sup>6</sup> "In 1742 he sold the property bought of Wheeler to Samuel Hawley, who owned it until his death in 1746. The Inventory of Samuel Hawley's estate gives under personal property, 'one mortgage deed from Edmund Hays for his blacksmith's tools'; also gives under real estate  $\frac{3}{4}$  acre and a small house purchased of Edm'd Hawes. In a mutual distribution of said Hawley's estate, his daughter, Ann Blackleach, wife of Joseph, gets two certain mortgages from Edmund Haws; but in a quit claim from the other heirs to said Ann and Joseph in Jan'y. 1747-8, it is explained that it should have been *one* mortgage deed from Edmund Hawes for Blacksmith's tools and also one absolute deed of warrantee of aforesaid  $\frac{3}{4}$  acre. There is no mortgage on record to Samuel Hawley from Edmund Hawes of his blacksmith's tools. In August 1749 Joseph and Ann Blackleach gave Edmund Hawes a quit claim deed of all their right in all lands, buildings, etc., which descended to them from their father, Samuel Hawley, and on the

<sup>3</sup>Smithfield Records of Deeds, No. 1, p. 102.

<sup>4</sup>ib. 353.

<sup>5</sup>Orcutt's Stratford, 1208, 1351.

<sup>6</sup>7 Stratford Deeds, 219.



same day Edmund Hawes gave Daniel Hede a warrantee deed of said  $\frac{3}{4}$  of an acre in Ripton parish, Stratford, with the blacksmith's shop thereon. In all references to Edmund Hawes his residence is given as Stratford."<sup>1</sup> Ripton parish is now the town of Huntington. Dec. 26, 1740, describing himself as formerly of Smithfield, now of Stratford, Conn., Edmond Hawes quitclaimed to Robert Staples, yeoman of Smithfield, about two acres of land lying on the S. E. side of said Staples's house, formerly in suit between said Hawes and Joshua Winsor, and recovered by the former."<sup>2</sup> No wife joins in the deed. Edmund Hawes was one of the grantees from the New Hampshire authorities of the town of Brunswick west of the Connecticut River, Oct. 13, 1761."<sup>3</sup> This region was claimed by New York, and an Order in Council was passed in England July 20, 1764, fixing the Connecticut River as the boundary of the two colonies."<sup>4</sup> Certain fees and charges were thereupon imposed beyond those contained in the N. H. grant, and the grantees of Brunswick and other towns in November, 1766, petitioned the King for relief."<sup>5</sup> Among those who signed petition No. 17 was Edmund Hawes."<sup>6</sup> Owing to this controversy the grantees did not take possession, and Brunswick was not settled till 1780."<sup>7</sup> It seems clear that the above named grantee and petitioner was Edmond Hawes of Stratford, Conn. Some of those who signed petition No. 17 and other petitions were of Stratford or the neighboring region of Connecticut."<sup>8</sup> The petitioners employed Samuel Robinson to carry their petition to England and joined with him Wm. S. Johnson, of Connecticut, who was going to England as agent of that colony."<sup>9</sup> Johnson was a resident of Stratford."<sup>10</sup> A comparison of the names of the co-grantees and co-petitioners of Edmond Hawes with Orcutt's History of Stratford shows that many

<sup>1</sup>Report from the Bridgeport Land & Title Co., Nov. 11, 1909.

<sup>2</sup>1 Smithfield Deeds, 601.

<sup>3</sup>26 N. H. State Papers (vol. 3 of Town Charters), 71, 73.

<sup>4</sup>4 Doc. Hist. of N. Y., 355.

<sup>5</sup>26 N. H. State Papers, 592, 593.

<sup>6</sup>Ib. 602.

<sup>7</sup>Ib. 638, 639.

<sup>8</sup>4 Doc. Hist. of N. Y., 1032.

<sup>9</sup>Hall's Early Hist. of Vt. 85.

<sup>10</sup>1 Orcutt's Stratford, 420.

of them were inhabitants of that town. Edmond<sup>4</sup> Hawes had a daughter, Anne, born in Rhode Island, who m.<sup>o</sup> in Smithfield June 11 or 12, 1750, Obediah Herendeen (or Herndeen). Her grandmother, Anne Hawkins, made her will Dec. 22, 1734, and d. Sept. 25, 1745. She left all her valuables to her granddaughter, Anne Hawes, when 18 years of age or upon her marriage, and in case of her death before that event, then to her son-in-law, Edmond Hawes.<sup>5</sup> Obediah Herendeen is described in deeds as husbandman and yeoman. He was grantee of lands in Smithfield in deeds dated Oct. 7, 1742, March 26, 1747, and June 13, 1760.<sup>6</sup> By deed dated March 8, 1773, he conveyed to Jonathan Newell, of Smithfield, about seven acres in that town, part of his homestead farm, for the consideration of 25 pounds and 16 shillings.<sup>7</sup> Oct. 22, 1774, for the consideration of three pounds he conveyed about half an acre to Jesse Jenckes, of Smithfield.<sup>8</sup> By deed dated May 29, 1781, describing himself as husbandman of Smithfield, he conveyed all his lands in that town, two lots of about 12 acres, including his dwelling house, to Jesse Jenckes, for the consideration of 162 pounds silver.<sup>9</sup> In all these deeds his wife, Anne, joined. The 1774 census of R. I. gives Obediah Herndeen as head of a family in Smithfield consisting of two males over 16, three males under 16, and two females over 16 (p. 106). He d. Oct. 25, 1789.<sup>5</sup> It is likely that Edmond<sup>4</sup> Hawes m. second, Susanna — and had in Stratford Edmond, b. July , 1740. 2 Orcutt, 1212, gives this birth as Edward, son of Edward and Susanna, but it is believed that he is in error. There was an Edmund Hawes, of Sherman, Conn., b. according to family records in possession of his grandson Daniel Pinckney Hawes, of Decorah, Iowa, Jan. 1, 1741 (meaning probably 1740-1), who, it is believed, was the child referred to by Orcutt. This Edmund of Sherman also has a grandson Edmund Vinson Hawes, of Bridgeport. Mr. Hawes, of Decorah, thinks the

<sup>4</sup>Naragansett Hist. Reg., 201, 259, 263; 1 Smithf. Marriages, 53.

<sup>5</sup>Smithfield Council, Book No. 1, p. 277, in Of. of City Clerk, Central Falls, R. I.

<sup>6</sup>3 Smithfield Deeds, 86 and 561; 5 ib. 2.

<sup>7</sup>7 ib. 100.

<sup>8</sup>6 ib. 430.

<sup>9</sup>7 ib. 320.

<sup>5</sup>Vital Recs. of R. I., Smithfield; 1 Smithf. Births & Deaths, 271.

name of Pinckney an ancient one in the family. It is a southern name and it is possible that Edmond<sup>4</sup> may have gone to North Carolina to visit his brother John and there m. Susanna Pinckney. Sarah Hawes, who m. Richard Hubbell, in Huntington, Conn., Sept. 9, 1798, may have been the grand-daughter<sup>o</sup> of Edmond.<sup>4</sup> It is proper to say, however, that Orcutt does not give his authority and that the Stratford and Ripton records do not show the birth of Edmond or Edward Hawes in or about 1740.

JOHN<sup>4</sup> (John,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes, b. —; m. Mary —, at North Kingstown, Jan. 31, 1722-3.<sup>d</sup> He was accepted freeman of the town and returned to the General Assembly to be accepted freeman of the colony Jan. 27, 1723-4.<sup>e</sup> He was made a freeman of the colony the third Tuesday of February, 1723-4.<sup>f</sup> June 3, 1723, he was chosen constable.<sup>g</sup> There are various mentions of him in the Providence records. By trade he was a carpenter or joiner, but for a number of years after his father's death he was an innkeeper in Providence. By deed dated Dec. 23, 1730, John Hawes, of Providence, carpenter, conveyed land there to Benjamin Tillinghast of the same place, mariner, for the consideration of 330 pounds current money of New England. His wife Mary joined.<sup>h</sup> Feb. 24, 1729-30, describing himself as innholder, he had conveyed land to Joseph Angel by deed in which his wife did not join.<sup>i</sup> About 1731 he removed to North Carolina. By deed dated March 24, 1731-2, and acknowledged the same day in Providence, John Hawes,

<sup>c</sup>Bailey's Early Conn. Marriages, 92.

<sup>d</sup>The following is a correct extract from 1 Providence Births, Marriages and Deaths, page 60: "It appeared by a Cetifecate that John Hause was married in North Kingstown the last day of January-1722: by William Hall Justice. John Hause the son of John Hause and of Mary his wife was born in Providence the 30th day of August, anno Domini-1725— Mary Hause the daughter of John Hause and of Mary his wife—was born in Providence on the Last day of august anno Dom: 1727." The above three extracts follow consecutively on the page and close together, the first one appearing to be in a different handwriting from the other two. The corresponding printed item in the vital statistics of Rhode Island relative to the marriage is not a copy but an inference. The original leaves no doubt that the marriage refers to the parents of the two children.

<sup>e</sup>13 Early Prov. Recs., 40.

<sup>f</sup>4 R. I. Col. Recs., 337.

<sup>g</sup>13 Early Prov. Recs., 61.

<sup>h</sup>8 Prov. Deeds, 407.

<sup>i</sup>9 ib. 167.

joiner of Cape Fear, N. C., conveyed land in Providence to Robert Gibbs, merchant of that town, for the consideration of 24 pounds.<sup>1</sup> On July 6, 1747, describing himself as of Onslow County, N. C., he conveyed land in Rhode Island to Henry Sweeting, of Providence, innholder, for the consideration of 50 pounds of N. C. currency.<sup>2</sup> His wife did not join in these last two deeds. He was doubtless the John Hawes who petitioned the Governor and Council of N. C., Sept. 8, 1737, for a grant of 100 acres of land in New Hanover County.<sup>3</sup> His children, b. in Providence were: John, b. Aug. 30, 1725, and Mary, b. Aug. 31, 1727. The printed U. S. Census of 1790 for North Carolina (p. 97) shows, in Onslow County, John Hawes, Sr.,<sup>m</sup> owning one slave, who was no doubt the one born in Providence Aug. 30, 1725, and John Hawes, Jr.,<sup>n</sup> doubtless his son. John Hawes, Sr., had in his family one male over 16, one male under 16 and 2 females; John, Jr., 1 adult male and 1 female. This census also shows (p. 195) in the same county Joseph "Haus," with a family consisting of one male over 16, one male under 16, and one female. He also may have been a son of John, Sr. In 1909 Edmund A. Hawes, Jr., of Atkinson, Pender Co., N. C., wrote that his father's name was Edmund A. Hawes, his grandfather was John R. Hawes, his great grandfather Edmund A. Hawes, and his great-great grandfather John Hawes. The last named not improbably was the John Hawes, Jr., of the Census of 1790.

5 JOSEPH<sup>3</sup> (John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes, b. July 16, 1673; m.<sup>o</sup> first Mary<sup>3</sup> (Jeremiah,<sup>2</sup> Thomas<sup>1</sup>) Howes, about 1695, who d.<sup>o</sup> Jan. 10, 1728-9, in her fifty-eighth year; m.<sup>p</sup> second, March 21, 1729-30, Bethiah Winslow (daughter of Gershom Hall and widow of Kenelm<sup>3</sup> Winslow of Harwich), who d.<sup>o</sup> Sept. 8, 1745,

<sup>1</sup>11 ib. 129.

<sup>2</sup>12 ib. 370.

<sup>3</sup>14 N. C. Colonial & State Recs., 277.

<sup>m</sup>He would appear to be the John Hawes who was No. 66 on the muster roll of forces in Onslow Co. to serve as militia in a regiment of foot, taken Oct. 25, 1754 (22 N. C. Col. & State Recs., 340).

<sup>n</sup>He may have been the John Hawes who was sergeant in the 10th N. C. Jan. 1782—Jan. 1783 (16 N. C. Col. & State Recs., 1084).

<sup>o</sup>Gravestone Recs. Yar. Mass., 21. This printed record calls her Mercy, but the writer on personal inspection found the name clearly Mary, and it is Mary in the town records. (62 N. E. Reg. 202.)

<sup>p</sup>Int. Mch. 19, 1729-30, Har. Recs.; 11 Mf. 248.

in her seventy-third year; m.<sup>g</sup> third July 3, 1746, Sarah Hopkins (daughter of Thomas<sup>2</sup> Howes and widow of Stephen<sup>4</sup> Hopkins), who survived him. Joseph<sup>3</sup> Hawes d. Nov. 16, 1752.<sup>o</sup> That his first wife was Mary Howes, daughter of Jeremiah Howes and grand-daughter of Governor Thomas Prence, appears from a deed (recorded in Plymouth County Registry of Deeds, vol. 29, p. 121), dated Sept. 27, 1734, in which he, described as gentleman, with his wife Bethiah and his children, conveys to Cornelius Bennett all the right of his late wife Mary in and to lands and meadow in Bridgewater and Middleborough that had belonged to Gov. Prence.<sup>r</sup> He was a deacon of the church, representative in the legislature in 1713 and 1714 and town clerk and treasurer for 7 years from 1729.<sup>s</sup> At the division of the common lands in 1712 he received 28 shares out of a total of 3118 distributed among 150 or 160 individuals or interests.<sup>t</sup> He left a will dated May 25, 1752 (9 Barn. Prob. Recs. 34). The inventory of his estate amounted to £373 18s. 4½d., including lands and houses to the value of £284 (Ib. 38).

*Children, all by his first wife and all b. in Yarmouth:*<sup>u</sup>

SARAH, b. Apr. 1, 1696.

ELIZABETH, b. Nov. 6, 1697.

EDMUND, b. June 13, 1699.

THOMAS, b. May 16, 1701.

JOSEPH, b. Jan. 12, 1702-3.

MARY, b. March 23, 1703-4.

TEMPERANCE, b. Dec. 31, 1705.

DAVID, b. Oct. 10, 1707.

PRINCE, b. Dec. 29, 1709.

THANKFUL, b. Apr. 16, 1712.

DESIRE, b. —; d. March, 1715.<sup>v</sup>

His son Prince Hawes graduated at Harvard College in 1728. He was one of the selectmen of Yarmouth for 11 years

<sup>q</sup>Har. Recs.

<sup>r</sup>62 N. E. Reg. 202.

<sup>s</sup>Swift 236, 238. His mention of Joseph Hawes in 1665 (p. 237) is a misprint for Howes.

<sup>t</sup>Ib. 126.

<sup>u</sup>Yar. Recs.; 5 Mf. 162.

<sup>v</sup>The late Wm. P. Davis.

from 1756 and town clerk and treasurer for five years from 1765.<sup>10</sup> He also served as school master of the town. He died in 1771. A glimpse of him in his old age is given by his grandson Deacon Joseph Hawes about 1836, when speaking of the educational facilities in Yarmouth a little before the Revolutionary War: "At this time I lived with my aged grandfather, who had a liberal education, but in low circumstances. I could learn more in his corner with my pine candle, in one evening, than I could at school in a week."<sup>11</sup> Isaac Hawes, great-grandson of Joseph,<sup>8</sup> removed to Vassalboro', Me., and his grandson, the late Granville P. Hawes, who graduated at Bowdoin College in 1860, and served in the Civil War, was a Justice of the Marine Court of the City of New York. Granville attained the rank of Brevet Lieutenant Colonel. He was b. July 3, 1838, and d. Dec. 28, 1893. His son, James Anderson Hawes (Yale, 1894), is a lawyer in New York City. The line is James<sup>9</sup> Anderson, Granville<sup>8</sup> P., Joshua,<sup>7</sup> Isaac,<sup>6</sup> Thomas,<sup>5</sup> Thomas,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond.<sup>1</sup> Granville's wife was Euphemia<sup>9</sup> Anderson Vose, of New York City. She d. Sept. 12, 1907.

7 EBENEZER<sup>3</sup> (John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes, b. March 24, 1678-9; m.<sup>a</sup> in Edgartown, Feb. 23, 1699-1700, Sarah Norton (daughter of Isaac Norton, Jr.), who d.<sup>a</sup> Jan. 9, 1741-2, in her sixty-fifth year; he d.<sup>a</sup> Oct. 7, 1727. He became a captain in the militia. About 1706 he removed to Monomoy (afterward Chatham). He was chosen one of the selectmen there in 1707, and ten times thereafter, the last time in 1719. He is styled captain in the records of March 13, 1715-16, when he was chosen moderator. In 1709 he was one of two appointed "to make preparation for a minister."<sup>b</sup> In 1710 and 1715 he was coroner for Barnstable Co.<sup>d</sup> In 1716 he was appointed town agent to demand, sue for and recover from the Rev. Mr. Hugh Adams "what the said Adams oweth to the town of

<sup>10</sup>Swift, 237, 238.

<sup>11</sup>Ib. 224.

<sup>1</sup>See New England Family History, vol. 2, No. 8, p. 307.

<sup>2</sup>Edgartown Vital Recs., 131. Although the record calls her father "Jr.," it has been doubted if the statement is correct.

<sup>3</sup>Gravestone Recs. Yar. Mass. 21.

<sup>4</sup>See Smith 154, 155, 159-162, 167, 176, 180.

<sup>5</sup>Mass. Civil List, 158.

Chatham" with power to employ attorneys. He was also chosen to procure a suitable minister for the town.<sup>6</sup> July 31, 1717, he purchased half of a brick dwelling in Boston and Aug. 24, 1722, sold the same for 160 pounds.<sup>7</sup> He kept the tavern in Chatham. The Rev. Hugh Adams, minister of the town, charged him with uttering at the tavern slanderous statements about him in February, 1713-14, and repeating them in May, 1714, and accordingly brought suit against him in the court of Common Pleas. The case was tried at Barnstable on the third Tuesday of January, 1715-16, and resulted in judgment for the defendant. Thereupon Adams appealed to the Superior Court of Judicature, and the appeal was heard at Plymouth March 27-31, 1716, Judge Samuel Sewall presiding, when the judgment below was reversed and Adams obtained judgment for 10 shillings damages and 3 pounds and 5 shillings costs. Among the papers now on file are letters from the ministers of Eastham, Harwich and Yarmouth commendatory of Capt. Hawes, and a paper in support of him signed by most of the adult male inhabitants of Chatham.<sup>8</sup> This paper, with photographic signatures, will be found in Smith's History of Chatham.<sup>9</sup> He resided in Chatham N. of Emery's pond, where Cyrus Emery afterward lived.<sup>4</sup> By deed dated March 16, 1707-8, he bought of Nathaniel, William, Joseph and Ephraim Covell one-fifth of their one-third interest in the common lands.<sup>1</sup> By deed dated March 11, 1711-12, he sold one-half of his interest to Seth Taylor of Yarmouth,<sup>k</sup> who afterwards sold it to Thomas Doane.<sup>kk</sup> Upon the drawing of lots in the division of these lands in 1714, lot 7, a tract N. W. of the Goose Pond, fell to him.<sup>l</sup> He was also entitled to a share as a "privileged man," and in that capacity drew lot 15, S. of the Goose Pond.<sup>m</sup> Apr.

<sup>6</sup>Chat. Recs.

<sup>7</sup>36 Suffolk Deeds 135.

<sup>8</sup>Files 10812; Record Book of the court; Judge Sewall's Diary, Mass. Hist. Colls., Ser. 5, v. 7, p. 76.

<sup>9</sup>Pages 189 and 190. It contains the signatures of Daniel Sears, Isaac Hawes, John Taylor, Joseph Eldredge, William Eldredge, Jr., John Ryder, and Samuel Taylor, ancestors of the writer.

<sup>4</sup>Smith, 188.

<sup>1</sup>Ib. 189, 193; Files 7374.

<sup>k</sup>Smith, 194.

<sup>kk</sup>Thomas Doane papers.

<sup>l</sup>Smith, 198.

<sup>m</sup>Ib. 200, 201.

28, 1713, the proprietors of the common lands chose Mr. Hawes as their clerk and he recorded in a book the proceedings relative to the division both of the proprietors' and the "privileged men's" rights." 2 Freeman, 614, and Deyo, 592, give his name as Howes in the list of selectmen of Chatham, but this is an error.<sup>o</sup> About 1720 he returned to Yarmouth. After his return, according to the Province Laws, he was chosen the town's representative in the legislature in 1723, 1724, 1725 and 1726. The inventory of his estate amounted to £1506 5 shillings and 9 pence in personal property and £1083 and 15 shillings in real estate,<sup>q</sup> a large amount for the time and place.

*Children:*

JABEZ, b. Yarmouth, Sept. 13, 1700; d. young.<sup>s</sup>

JOHN, b. Yarmouth, May 3, 1702.

DESIRE, b. Yarmouth, March 22, 1703-4.<sup>t</sup>

EBENEZER, b. Yarmouth, July 15, 1705.

ISAAC, b. Manamoiet or Monomoy (Indian name of Chatham), Aug. 10, 1707.

RUTH, b. Monomoy, Feb. 3, 1708-9.

BENJAMIN, b. Chatham,<sup>u</sup> Oct. 13, 1710.

SOLOMON, b. Chatham, July 6, 1712; not mentioned in settlement of his father's estate and probably d. young.

BAYS<sup>v</sup> (Bayes), b. probably in Chatham.

JACOB,<sup>w</sup> b. probably in Chatham; probably d. before Dec. 29, 1741, the date of his mother's will, which does not mention him.<sup>v</sup>

8 ISAAC,<sup>3</sup> (John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes, b. March 9, 1679-80; m.<sup>w</sup> Jan. 8, 1700-1, Bethiah<sup>3</sup> (Jeremiah,<sup>2</sup> Thomas<sup>1</sup>) Howes; d.

<sup>a</sup>Ib. 196, 201. As to the common lands, see pp. 191-202.

<sup>o</sup>This sufficiently appears from the public records, and is also shown in the Howes Geneal., p. 204.

<sup>q</sup> Barn. Prob. Recs., 401.

<sup>r</sup>Yar. Recs.; 11 Mf. 111.

<sup>s</sup>John called eldest son in settlement of his father's estate.

<sup>t</sup>This must be the year considering the date of birth of the next child.

<sup>u</sup>So in the record, but should be Monomoy. Chatham was not incorporated till 1712.

<sup>v</sup>Named in settlement of their father's estate; 5 Barn. Prob. Recs., 145, 146; 6 ib. 140, 142.

<sup>w</sup> Barn. Prob. Recs., 114, proved Feb. 11, 1741-2.

<sup>x</sup>Yar. Recs. The record says Jan. 8, 1701. In view of the date of birth of the first child it must have been 1700-1, and not 1701-2.



before March 18, 1730-1, when letters of administration were granted on his estate. His wife's mother was Sarah Prence, daughter of Gov. Thomas Prence by his second wife, Mary Collier,<sup>a</sup> said to be the daughter of William Collier, of Duxbury. The original will of Jeremiah<sup>2</sup> Howes is lost. The record gives the names of his daughters Bethiah and Mary at least once as Hawes.<sup>v</sup> Bethiah (Howes) Hawes m.<sup>s</sup> second (int. April 11, 1741), as his second wife, John<sup>8</sup> (John,<sup>2</sup> Ralph<sup>1</sup>) Smith,<sup>c</sup> of Eastham, and third, Nov. 16, 1743, as his second wife, the Rev. Joseph Lord, of Chatham.<sup>b</sup> She d. before July 7, 1748, when letters of administration were granted on her thirds as widow of Isaac<sup>8</sup> Hawes, and perhaps between March 7, 1746-7, when she was named in Mr. Lord's will as one of his three executors, and June 30, 1748, when the will was proved and the other two only were appointed.<sup>e</sup> With his brother Joseph, Isaac<sup>8</sup> Hawes was named as executor in his father's will. He was given in the will his father's dwelling house and barn with an acre of ground surrounding them, and with his brother Joseph was equal devisee of the rest of his father's land and meadow, except eight acres given to his brother Ebenezer.<sup>d</sup> In the division of the common lands of Yarmouth in 1712 he received 24½ shares out of a total of 3118, distributed among 150 or 160 individuals or interests, the largest allotment to any individual being 70 shares to Jonathan Hallet.<sup>f</sup> He removed to Chatham about 1712. He is first mentioned in the town records March 25, 1713, when he was chosen fence viewer and surveyor of highways. He served in that capacity several terms down to and including 1721. In 1720 he began to be styled ensign. He later became lieutenant of the military company and is so styled in the probate records. March 13, 1715-16, he with others signed a paper in behalf of his brother Eben-

<sup>a</sup>59 N. E. Reg., 217.

<sup>v</sup>3 Barn. Prob. Recs., 174; 61 N. E. Reg., 200, 322.

<sup>2</sup>2 Eastham Recs.

<sup>c</sup>He d. between Dec. 1, 1742 (date of will) and Jan. 21, 1742-3 (date of probate). His will (6 Barn. Prob. Recs., 250) mentions his wife Bethiah.

<sup>b</sup>2 Otis, 36, 37.

<sup>e</sup>8 Barn. Prob. Recs., 413, 414. Madam Lord's wearing apparel, buckles and buttons were appraised at 46 pounds 2 shillings (Ib. 415, 416.) Perhaps his first wife's.

<sup>d</sup>Will of John Hawes, p. 151, *supra*.

<sup>f</sup>Swift, 126.

ezer in the suit of Hugh Adams against the latter.<sup>f</sup> In Chatham he resided N. W. of and some distance from the old burying ground. In 1712 he owned one-thirtieth of the common lands of Chatham and received a lot adjoining his other lands in Mrs. Covell's right. Feb. 17, 1713-14, he was one of the witnesses to the award of arbitrators respecting the rights of the "privileged men" in the common lands.<sup>g</sup> The Proprietor's Book of Chatham also shows that he owned marsh W. of Cockle Cove.

*Children, b. in Yarmouth.<sup>h</sup>*

- BETHIAH, b. July, 1701; perhaps m. Maziah Harding, whose wife was Bethiah and who had among his children, Bethiah, Desire and Prence.<sup>i</sup>
- 10 ISAAC, b. April, 1703.  
THANKFUL, b. March, 1705; m. Moses Young, of Eastham (int. March 6, 1724/5).<sup>j</sup>
- 11 JOHN, b. Jan. 22, 1706-7.  
DESIRE, b. Jan. 14, 1708-9.
- 12 JEREMIAH, b. April 5, 1711.

Probably the following were children of Isaac and Bethiah Hawes born in Chatham:

HANNAH, b. —; m. Feb. 21, 1749-50, John Slater.<sup>k</sup>

She appears to have married a second time James Ryder (int. Nov. 15, 1760).<sup>l</sup> If so, she died before May 5, 1763, when he made his will not mentioning a surviving wife.<sup>m</sup>

PATIENCE, b. —; m. — Hunt and had a son. Her husband died and she married again and moved away.<sup>n</sup>

SARAH, b. May 31, 1719; m.<sup>o1</sup> Sept. 29, 1743, Cornelius Higgins, of Eastham; d. in Haddam, Conn., April 7,

<sup>f</sup>Files 10812.

<sup>g</sup>Smith, 193, 194, 199, 200, map at p. 132.

<sup>h</sup>Yar. Recs.; 9 Mf. 251, 252; 61 N. E. Reg., 200, 322, where the birth of John is omitted.

<sup>i2</sup>Freeman, 599. Bethiah m. Ephraim Atwood of Eastham and had a son Hawes Atwood, b. Aug. 30, 1768, who d. Dec. 1770. (5 Mf. 121, 7 ib. 142, 13 ib. 30; Eastham Recs.)

<sup>j</sup>Eastham Recs.

<sup>k</sup>Chat. Recs.; 7 Mf. 138, 139.

<sup>l</sup>Chatham Recs.; 15 Mf. 132.

<sup>m</sup>Barn. Prob. Recs.

<sup>n</sup>Information obtained in 1881 from Miss Polly Taylor, an aged lady very well informed on the family history of the town.

<sup>o</sup>Eastham Records show their intention Feb. 19, 1742/3.

1788, leaving issue. From a "Paper read at a family meeting" of the Hurlbut family, at Racine, Wis., in 1860, by Henry H. Hurlbut, I extract the following from pages 10 et seq.: "Cornelius Higgins is said to have been born at Eastham, July 22, 1722, and he married Sarah Hawes, of Chatham, Cape Cod, Sept. 29, 1743. Who Sarah Hawes' father was I have not yet ascertained; nothing appears on the town or church records of Chatham of her birth, baptism or marriage which might reveal it. Her mother's maiden name was Sarah Prince, it is said." In this he is in error. Her grandmother was Sarah Prence. About 1750 or just prior thereto, Cornelius Higgins went to Haddam, Conn. He had nine children, one or more of whom, Hurlbut thinks, were born on the Cape. He died Oct., 1803; his wife died Apr. 7, 1788. One of their children died in 1857, aged over ninety-three years. From page 14 it appears that one of their sons was named Hawes Higgins. The so-called "Higgins-Hurlbut Chart" is annexed to this paper, which is to be found in the library of the New England Historic Genealogical Society, in Boston. This chart states that Sarah Hawes was born May 31, 1719. The Chatham church records commenced only with the ministry of the Rev. Joseph Lord in 1720. The family Bible of Gideon Higgins (son of Hawes Higgins and grandson of Cornelius and Sarah), born in 1782, recently in the possession of H. B. Welch, of Lynn, Mass., contains the following: "Cornelius Higgins (*Son of Ebenexer Higgins*) was born in *Eastham, Mass., July 22, 1722, and died Oct. 14, 1803. Sarah Hawes, his wife, was born in Chatham, Mass., May 31, 1719, and died April 7, 1788. They were married Sept. 29, 1743, and moved to Haddam, Conn., and had four sons and five daughters.*" The Society of Mayflower Descendants has accepted Sarah Higgins as daughter of Isaac<sup>8</sup> Hawes. See also Hurlbut Geneal. (1888), p. 82.<sup>o</sup>

---

<sup>o</sup>The Howes Geneal. by J. C. Howes (p. 12) makes the erroneous statement that Sarah, daughter of Jeremiah Howes, married Cornelius Higgins.

Letters of administration on the estate of Isaac<sup>8</sup> Hawes were granted to his widow.<sup>p</sup> The inventory of his estate, taken March 23, 1730-1, by John Collins, Daniel Sears and Paul Crowell, and sworn to by the widow April 21, 1731, amounted to 226 pounds and 8 shillings, including 191 pounds for real estate. March 24, 1730-1, the widow was allowed all the personal property.<sup>q</sup> July 6, 1733, John Collins, Thomas Atkins, Daniel Sears, Joseph Covell and Samuel Tucker were appointed to set off the widow's dower. They made and swore to their return Sept. 3, 1733.<sup>r</sup> The following is a copy: "In Pursuance of the Within written we the subscribers met Together the Third day of this Instant September and did lay out to the widow Mrs. Bethiah Hawse out of the Lands or Real estate of Mr. Isaac Haws of Chatham Deceased the bounds are as followeth for her thirds. We laid out to sd. widow the Dwelling house with all the Lands adjoyning thereto—Laid to said widow a piece of woodland Lying between the land of John Young & Paul Crowel his land that he bought of sd. Mr. Isaac Haws deceased Buting on a pond and from sd. pond by sd Youngs range about Twenty five rods to a red oak tree marked on the four sides. Thence on a streight line to Paul Crowes northwest bounds thence by sd Crowels line to the first specified bound with a Privilige and Liberty to cart out her wood and on other occasion as she has need of Through sd deceaseds other land Through gate or bars by sd Crowell range to y<sup>e</sup> road: laid out to sd widow a piece of meadow & Land being the wester end of sd deceaseds meadow adjoyning to Joseph Crowell<sup>qq</sup> meadow & by the River southerly to a stake by the river thence streight to the upland to a white oak marked on y<sup>e</sup> four sides Thence streight to ye fence Thence to the first specified bounds." It appears that Lt. Hawes had been unfortunate in his business transactions, and it was reported Nov. 29, 1733, that after deducting preferred claims, only 96 pounds 6 shillings and 2 pence of assets remained to pay 109 pounds and 2 shillings of debts. The court accordingly ordered payment of 17 shillings and 8 pence on the pound.<sup>r</sup> After the death of the

<sup>p</sup>4 Barn. Prob. Recs., 591.

<sup>q</sup>5 ib. 95.

<sup>qq</sup>Perhaps should be Covell.

<sup>r</sup>1b. 144, 145.

widow, letters of administration on the estate of Isaac Hawes were granted July 7, 1748, to his son John to administer the widow's thirds.<sup>8</sup> On the same date Jonathan Godfrey, Nehemiah Harding and William Nickerson, 3d, were appointed appraisers. The inventory, dated Oct. 7, 1748, amounted to 183 pounds old tenor. It included one piece of land where his dwelling house stood, one piece of land and meadow adjoining the dwelling house of Paul Crowell, Jr., one piece of land adjoining the east side of the land or homestead of John Young and one piece of meadow and upland adjoining that of John Collins at or near a place called Seconsett. The final account of the administrator verified July 2, 1751, reported that he had sold the land for 13 pounds one shilling and four pence; expenses five pounds and five shillings; to be divided among the creditors, seven pounds 16 shillings and four pence.<sup>9</sup> He had been authorized to make the sale by act of the Legislature of Jan. 17, 1749-50 (chap. 201).<sup>10</sup> The homestead lot was sold to Ebenezer Paine, who had removed from Harwich (now Brewster) to Chatham about 1730.<sup>11</sup> "On the 30th of July 1750, for the sum of five pounds and seventeen shillings and four pence, John Hawes, of Chatham, administrator of the estate of Isaac Hawes, sold to Ebenezer Paine of the same town a certain tract where the dwelling house of the late Isaac Hawes last stood, containing six acres more or less; bounded; 'westerly on the said Ebenezer Paine; southerly on the way until it comes to the land that James Covell bought of Simeon Covell, then northerly to the Pond, and westerly by the pond to James Covell's land where the fence stands, and by the fence and James Covell's land to said Paines land.'<sup>12</sup> Acknowledged Feb. 8, 1750-1, and recorded at Barnstable Feb. 18, 1750-1, in Book 24, folios 30."

9 BENJAMIN<sup>3</sup> (John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes, b. Mch. 20, 1682-3; m.<sup>13</sup> in Edgartown July 24, 1705, Dorcas Smith (daugh-

<sup>8</sup>7 Barn. Prob. Recs., 237.

<sup>8</sup>8 Ib., 472.

<sup>10</sup>Acts & Resolves of the Gen. Court of Mass. Bay, 1747-1752, vol. 14, p. 344.

<sup>11</sup>Josiah Paine; 62 N. E. Reg., 203-204.

<sup>12</sup>Taken by Mr. Paine from the original deed.

<sup>13</sup>Edgartown Vital Recs., 131.

ter of Benjamin Smith) ; d. between Oct. 15 and Nov. 28, 1722. His widow m.<sup>e</sup> Dec. 22, 1724, John Worth. Benjamin<sup>3</sup> Hawes resided in Edgartown and was a man of prominence. In the town records he is styled esquire in 1717. In 1719 he was attorney for the Honorable Society for the Propagation of the Gospel among the Indians.<sup>7</sup> He was coroner for Dukes County in 1713 and appointed Justice of the Peace for that County July 3, 1722.<sup>8</sup> According to Banks (*Hist. of Martha's Vineyard*, vol. 1, 507) he was treasurer of Dukes County in 1712 and coroner in 1716. The same authority, vol. 2 (*Edgartown*, 205, 206), states that the Sachem of Chappaquiddick in 1718 sold to Benjamin Hawes "one eighth of all the herbage on Chappaquiddick that shall ever hereafter grow from the 20th of October till the 25th of March every year forever" (4 Dukes County Deeds, 44). Judge Sewall's *Diary*, speaking of a Court held on Martha's Vineyard Oct. 8, 1712, says: "Sachem Chappaquiddick appeared before us and Mr. Hawes was attorney for him."<sup>9</sup> In Nov., 1716, he was one of a committee appointed by the Legislature "to go to Nantucket & Inquire into the Grievances there" of the Indians.<sup>10</sup> It seems that Hawes as attorney for the Sachem of Chappaquiddick had not accounted for seven years, as claimed, for the rents, profits, etc., of said island, and Dec. 4, 1722, a committee was appointed to call to an account his heirs, executors and administrators annually.<sup>11</sup> He was a leading man of Dukes County, and Judge Sewall in his *Diary* speaks of being accompanied by him on a visit to the Vineyard in April, 1714.<sup>12</sup> The will<sup>13</sup> of Benjamin Hawes, of Edgartown, dated Oct. 15, 1722, and proved Nov. 28, 1722, mentions wife Dorcas, eldest son Benjamin (to whom, among other things, he gives his silver headed cane and seal ring) ; daughter Experience (to whom, among other things, he gives the great Bible that was his mother's) ; son Samuel ; daughter Jedidah, and child his wife goes with, Shubael. His wife is made executrix and his friends, Benjamin

<sup>7</sup>3 Dukes Co. Deeds, 372.

<sup>8</sup>Mass. Civil List, 160, 149.

<sup>9</sup>18 N. E. Reg., 72.

<sup>10</sup>9 Province Laws, 494. See also vol. 10, p. 38.

<sup>11</sup>10 *ib.* 212, 213, 229, 277. See also vol. 9, p. 318.

<sup>12</sup>Mass. Hist. Colls., ser. 5, vol. 6, pp. 432-438.

<sup>13</sup>1 Dukes Co. Prob. Recs., 39.

Smith, Thomas Smith and Benjamin Peas, overseers. Witnesses, Daniel Greenleaf, Shubael Gorum, Ebenezer Hawes, Desire Hawes. The inventory of his estate, dated Nov. 1, 1723, amounted to £1012 17s. 2d., as follows: Housing and lands, £492; "Cretures," £97 3s.; Debts due estate, £231 9s. 7d.; Amount of desperate debts, £25 19s. 9d.; Wearing apparel, £13 4s.; Household goods, £153 0s. 10d.

*Children, all born in Edgartown.<sup>f</sup>*

EXPERIENCE, b. Nov. 14, 1706.

JEDIDAH, b. July 30, 1709.

BENJAMIN, b. April 25, 1712.

SAMUEL, b. Feb. 25, 1717-18.

SHUBAEL, b. August, 1721; d. March 12, 1722-3.<sup>g</sup>

SHUBAEL, b. Dec. 22, 1722, after the death of his father.

A descendant of Benjamin<sup>3</sup> Hawes, William<sup>7</sup> T. Hawes (John,<sup>6</sup> Shubael,<sup>5</sup> Samuel<sup>4</sup>) graduated at Brown University in 1825. He married Maria, a daughter of Gov. Marcus Morton of Massachusetts. His son, Marcus Morton Hawes, graduated at Harvard College in 1858, and served through the Civil War, attaining the rank of Captain and acting as Brigade quartermaster. John<sup>8</sup> A. Hawes (John<sup>7</sup> A., John<sup>6</sup>) graduated there in 1845. He served in the Civil War and several terms in the Massachusetts Senate. Mary<sup>7</sup> (John<sup>6</sup>) Hawes married William T. Wardwell, of Bristol, R. I. Their son, William T. Wardwell, who d. Jan. 3, 1911, aged over 80 years, was for many years treasurer of the Standard Oil Co. of New York. He was active in the Prohibition movement and in charitable work in New York City. John<sup>6</sup> (Shubael,<sup>5</sup> Samuel,<sup>4</sup> Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes was a sea-captain and later a justice of the peace and collector of customs for the port of New Bedford.<sup>h</sup>

<sup>f</sup>Edgartown Vital Recs., 38.

<sup>g</sup>Ib. 230; 51 N. E. Reg., 197. The gravestone inscription quoted gives his age as 1 yr. and 7 mos., which would be erroneous if it referred to the Shubael b. Dec. 22, 1722. On the other hand the will does not mention a Shubael. The suggestion of a first Shubael, b. Aug., 1721, is made for what it may be worth.

<sup>h</sup>An account of him by his grand-daughter, Rebecca W. Hawes, was read before the Old Dartmouth Historical Society in New Bedford in 1908. (Old Dartmouth Sketches, No. 22.)

#### FOURTH GENERATION.

10 ISAAC<sup>4</sup> (Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes, b. April, 1703; m. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> who d. Feb. 2, 1792;<sup>j</sup> he d.<sup>k</sup> Dec., 1785. The identification of Isaac<sup>4</sup> with the Isaac who thus died and was buried in 1785 is not absolute, but there can be little doubt of their identity. The age given on the gravestone does not exactly correspond with the date of birth appearing on the Yarmouth records, but the discrepancy is only such as might readily occur from error in the record or mistake on the part of those who directed the inscription. That he had a son Prince points to descent from Gov. Prence. The Land Records of Kent,<sup>l</sup> Conn., show the purchase by Isaac Hawes, of Philipse Patent, from Luke Sweetland of a piece of land in Kent April 3, 1769. About the same time Joseph Taylor, of the same place, purchased land in Kent of Zadock Bostwick. Philipse Patent was in the part of Dutchess County, New York, now Putnam county, and adjoined Kent. The neighboring region was known as the "Oblong," and to it about 1750 there was a large emigration from Chatham and other towns on Cape Cod. As the Isaac Hawes who died in Kent is found there in company with Joseph Taylor, and came thither in his company from that part of Dutchess Co., N. Y., now included in Putnam Co., and as Joseph Taylor is known to have gone from Chatham to what is now the town of Southeast, Putnam Co., and thence to what is now Warren,<sup>n</sup> there would seem to be but

---

<sup>4</sup>She may have been a Ryder and it is possible that she was not his first wife. Wm. C. Smith is strongly of the opinion that she was the daughter of Samuel Tucker of Chatham, Mass., and his wife Hannah (Mayo), b. in September, 1714, who had a sister Eunice. (4 Mf. 184.)

<sup>j</sup>The gravestone inscription in the Warren Centre (Conn.) burying ground reads: "In Memory of Mrs. Hannah Hawes Who died Feb. 2nd 1792 AE 75 wife to Mr. Isaac Hawes." The Warren town records give her age as 77.

<sup>k</sup>The following is the gravestone inscription in the same burying ground: "In Memory of Mr. Isaac Hawes Who died Dec. 1785 AE 84."

<sup>l</sup>Kent included the present town of Warren.

<sup>n</sup>Information obtained in 1882 from Rev. John L. Taylor of Andover, Mass., and his brother.



little doubt that this Isaac and No. 10 are the same person. Among the tenants of Phillipse Patent were others of Cape Cod origin. Among the tenants in possession of farms on the Phillipse Patent May 1, 1768, was a Hawes. The first name is not given, but it was no doubt Isaac, as no other Hawes was in the region at the time.<sup>m</sup> Hawes and Taylor no doubt left New York because they could obtain only leasehold rights there, while in Connecticut estates in fee could be obtained. Isaac<sup>4</sup> Hawes left surviving him his widow Hannah, two sons, Isaac and Samuel (who continued to live in Connecticut), and three daughters, Eunice (wife of Josiah Webb), Susannah (wife of Asher Green) and Zibiah<sup>n</sup> (wife of Joseph Brown). Letters of administration on his estate were granted to his son Samuel May 2, 1786.<sup>n</sup> A son, Prince, described as storekeeper, had died in Hempstead, L. I., between Apr. 22, 1782 (date of his will), and Nov. 11, 1782 (date of probate). His will describes him as late of Redding, Conn., and mentions brothers Isaac and Samuel and sisters Eunice, Zurviah,<sup>n</sup> and Susannah, "all now or late of Kent, Conn."<sup>o</sup> It appears that Prince Hawes, of Redding, was a member of the "Reading Loyalist Association," and with over 100 of that vicinage signed a loyalist declaration which was printed Feb. 25, 1775, in James Rivington's "Gazetteer," published in New York City. Thereupon the signers were made at least very uncomfortable, and Prince Hawes "fled to Long Island in 1776, and the fact was communicated to General Washington."<sup>p</sup> Isaac<sup>5</sup> Hawes removed from Warren to Danby, Tompkins Co., N. Y., and had a numerous family, among his grandsons being the late Horace Hawes, a wealthy and prominent citizen of San Francisco, son of Newton<sup>6</sup> Hawes. A grandson of Isaac<sup>4</sup> Hawes and son of Isaac,<sup>5</sup> the Rev. Prince Hawes, graduated at Williams College in 1805. The Rev. Josiah Hawes, brother of the Rev. Prince, also graduated at Williams, in 1800. Lowman Hawes, another son of Isaac,<sup>5</sup> graduated at Yale College in 1814,

<sup>m</sup>Pelletreau's Hist. of Putnam Co., 418, 419. The tenancy was a joint one, the entry being "Haws & Wm. Judd."

<sup>n</sup>Litchfield (Conn.) Prob. Recs.

<sup>o</sup>The same person.

<sup>p</sup>L. 35 of Wills, 122, N. Y. Surrogate's Office.

<sup>q</sup>Grumman's "Revolutionary Soldiers of Redding, Conn.," pp. 14 et seq., and 188.

and settled as a lawyer at Maysville, Ky. Welles<sup>7</sup> Hawes, a son of the Rev. Prince<sup>6</sup> Hawes, graduated at Yale College in 1834.

11 JOHN<sup>4</sup> (Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes, b. in Yarmouth Jan. 22, 1706-7; m. in Chatham about 1736 Abigail<sup>4</sup> (Thomas,<sup>3</sup> Ephraim,<sup>2</sup> John<sup>1</sup>) Doane, b. Eastham March 28, 1708.<sup>4</sup> She d. in the smallpox epidemic January 22, 1766.<sup>5</sup> He d. about Feb. 3, 1779, when his son John is charged three pounds and 14 shillings for making his coffin.<sup>6</sup> He was probably buried, with his wife and other persons, a little southwest of the house now owned by Ebenezer Hawes, where graves are still visible, which locality seems to be referred to in the division of property with James Ryder May 30, 1766.<sup>7</sup> He was brought to Chatham by his parents and continued to reside there. He was one of the selectmen for fourteen years from 1765.<sup>8</sup> He is mentioned in the town records Oct. 4, 1739 (cattle mark recorded). Mar. 7, 1743-4, he was elected tithingman. In 1752 he was chosen as jurymen and at various times thereafter was on the grand and petit jury. In 1759 he was chosen constable and also in 1762, 1763, 1773, and 1775. In 1759 he was appointed one of the agents "to care and see that Rev. Stephen Emery has his wood and hay from the town this year in season." In 1762 he was appointed to hire a schoolmaster. In 1765 he was made agent to petition the General Court for an abatement of taxes because of the removal of so great a number from the town. He owned land in partnership with James Ryder in 1766.<sup>9</sup> April 18, 1766, he was appointed to receive and with others distribute among poor families the money contributed by other towns in consequence of the smallpox in Chatham. With Samuel Taylor he was appointed in 1768 to arrange for a school in the S. W. quarter of the town. In 1768 he signed as one of the select-

<sup>4</sup>Will of Thos. Doane (9 Barn. Prob. Recs., 237); Doane Family, by Alfred A. Doane, p. 59. The will, dated March 17, and proved Sept. 22, 1756, names his daughter Abigail, wife of John Hawes.

<sup>5</sup>87 Mass. Archives, 370.

<sup>6</sup>Account book of Charles Atkins, carpenter, in the possession of J. William Atkins, of Berkeley, Cal.

<sup>7</sup>13 Barn. Prob. Recs., 258.

<sup>8</sup>2 Freeman 614.

<sup>9</sup>13 Barn. Prob. Recs., 258.

men the town's appreciative reply to the letter of the town of Boston recommending a Provincial convention. Feb. 1, 1772, he was one of those appointed to divide the estate of James Ryder's wife.<sup>10</sup> April 6, 1772, he was one of those who set off the dower of Thankful Collins, widow of John Collins.<sup>11</sup> Dec. 17, 1772, he was appointed one of the committee of nine "to consider of ye greavences Laid before us from Town of Boston, and to report" at an adjourned meeting. The report was made Dec. 29, "and then red said report two or three times deliberately and after som debate and amendaments the Town with a full meeting voted their acceptance of ye comittess report and then voted that the Town Clerk should exhibit a copy of said report and transmit ye same to ye Town Clerk of Boston."<sup>12</sup> Jan. 22, 1773, he was appointed agent to get Rev. Mr. Emery's wood and hay for the year. Nov. 30 of the same year he was made member of a committee to contract with carpenters to enlarge the meeting house. January 26, 1775, it was voted by the town that Mr. John Hawes (probably then constable) should not pay the Province money to Mr. Harrison Gray<sup>13</sup> till further order from the town, and that they would defend Mr. Hawes in so doing. In 1749 he petitioned the General Court for leave to sell his father's real estate that had been set off to his mother as her dower. The petition is written in a plain, neat hand, well spelled, and, apparently by the petitioner himself, as follows: "To the Honble Spencer Phips Esq. Lt. Govr. and Commander in Chief in and over His Majst. Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, and to the Honble. the Councill & House of Representatives in General Court assembled the 22 Nov. 1749. Humbly Sheweth John Hawes of Chatham in ye county of Barnstable, admr. etc., yt he fully purposing to have put in his Petition at his Majesties Supr. Court of Judicature, holden at Barnstable in July last, for license to sell a parcell of Land being the remaining part of the insolvent Estate of Mr. Isaac Hawes Deceased, in order to pay sd Deceased Debts, but so it was that sd Court was adjourned without day the second day of the sd setting, and that notwith-

<sup>10</sup>17 lb., 49.

<sup>11</sup>Ib. 113.

<sup>12</sup>Copy, *infra*, p. 181.

<sup>13</sup>He was the Provincial Treasurer and a loyalist. (Mass. Civil List, 45.)

standing ye Petitioner dwelling more than twenty miles from ye place of setting of sd Court, he came there a few minutes after said Court was adjourned as aforesd, but too late and inasmuch as the Supr. Court sets in sd County but once in a year. Your Petitioner is like to be much exposed by the creditors demands before he can at ye Supr. Court obtain Licence to sell sd land appraised at no more than one hundred and eighty three pounds old Tennor, wherefore ye Petitioner prays that this Honble. Court will be pleased to Grant his Licence to sell sd. land for the purpose aforesd and your petitioner as in duty bound shall ever pray. John Hawes."<sup>a</sup> He resided in West

*John Hawes*

Signature of John Hawes  
to petition, 1740.

Chatham, his house being S. of the main road a little E. of where the road to East Harwich branches off. His homestead land extended easterly to a point about opposite the road that runs northerly to the old burying ground, where it met the land of Samuel Taylor. It stretched southerly to the "Cove" (sometimes called Cockle Cove), and included certain islands of salt meadow, called "flats," in the Cove. In 1766 he had also owned land in common with James Ryder near Ebenezer Paine's in the northern part of the town. June 10, 1779, letters of administration on his estate were granted to his son John.<sup>b</sup> The inventory was taken June 24, 1779, by James Covell, Barnabas Eldredge and Sylvanus Harding. It amounted to 1094 pound and 10 shillings paper, including 639 pounds for the homestead farm and buildings. The assets also included real estate in partnership with his son John (the homestead farm and buildings), a woodlot in Harwich and three parcels of meadow in Chatham. The inventory was allowed Sept. 9, 1779.<sup>c</sup> The administrator's account, dated Dec. 21, 1780, states that the personal property was appraised at 455 pounds 10 shillings paper, equal to 34 pounds silver,

<sup>a</sup>18 Mass. Archives, 505.

<sup>b</sup>16 Barn. Prob. Recs., 155.

<sup>c</sup>11 ib. 129, 130.

by act of the legislature 1342 paper dollars being worth 100 dollars in silver.<sup>d</sup> James Covell, Joseph Doane and Richard Sears were the appraisers. Dec. 24, 1780, Nathan Bassett was appointed to represent the heirs of his son Thomas Hawes, who had died since his father's death. The settlement of the estate was dated Oct. 9, 1781, the real estate being assigned to the son John Hawes, he being required to pay the other heirs for their shares. Besides John, those specified as entitled were the heirs and legal representatives (not named) of Thomas Hawes, deceased, Anna Hunter of Chatham, Patience Hawes, Bethiah Taylor, widow, and Ruhamah Hawes. The lands were appraised at 90 pounds and 10 shillings silver, including 46 pounds for the house and land upon which it stood.<sup>e</sup>

*Children,<sup>f</sup> all born in Chatham:*

SAMUEL, b. Feb. 7, 1736-7; d. Sept. 14, 1739.

ANNAH, b. Aug. 6, 1738; m. Joseph Hunter, of Nantucket (int. Feb. 20, 1766);<sup>g</sup> living and described as of Chatham, Oct. 9, 1781.

PATIENCE, b. Nov. 26, 1740; d. unmarried.

BETHIAH, b. Sept. 7, 1742. She m. first Elisha Howes Dec. 9, 1762.<sup>h</sup> He d. May 3, 1772,<sup>i</sup> in his 33rd year. She was appointed his administratrix Sept. 22, 1772,<sup>j</sup> and was made guardian of her children, David and Priscilla, Nov. 29, 1774.<sup>j</sup> She married second, Barnabas Taylor and had a daughter, Rhodia. He d. between May 25, 1776 (date of his will),<sup>k</sup> and July 9, 1776 (date of its probate). He gave to his wife, Bethiah, 1/3 of his personal property and the use of 1/3 of his real estate, to his daughter Rhodia 20s., to his sister Abigail, wife of Joshua Ellis, 2/3 of his real estate and made her his residuary devisee and legatee. To John Taylor, son of his cousin, Seth Taylor, he gave £13 6s. 8d., and

<sup>d</sup>10 ib. 97-100.

<sup>e</sup>1 ib. 134-137.

<sup>f</sup>Chat. Recs.; 10 Mf. 196, 197.

<sup>g</sup>Chat. Recs.; int. Oct. 30, 1762, 15 Mf. 132.

<sup>h</sup>Gravestone; 8 Mf. 238.

<sup>i</sup>16 Barn. Pro. Recs., 28.

<sup>j</sup>15 ib. 202 & 206. According to the Howes Genealogy (pp. 20 & 33), there were two other sons, Stephen and Elisha.

<sup>k</sup>17 Barn. Prob. Recs., 349.

he made his cousin, Seth Taylor, executor. His inventory, taken Aug. 13, 1776, amounted to £491 11s., more than half in real estate.<sup>1</sup> She was living and described as Bethiah Taylor, widow, Oct. 9, 1781.

13 THOMAS, b. April 10, 1744.

RUHAMAH, b. Nov. 2, 1747; unmarried Oct. 9, 1781.

The writer's Aunt Patience (Hawes) Howes informed him that her Aunt Hamy (Ruhamah) married late in life John Fish of Sandwich, that while a girl she went with her father, Deacon John<sup>5</sup> Hawes, to Barnstable on business and that when the business was finished they went to "Great Marshes" and visited her Aunt Hamy, who received them with great affection. No satisfactory record of her marriage has been revealed and nothing further found except that she was childless.<sup>m</sup>

14 JOHN, b. in 1752 or 1753.

#### REPORT OF COMMITTEE OF CORRESPONDENCE.

"The Committy of corrispondence appointed by ye Inhabitants of the Town of Chatham in their Town meeting the seventeenth day of December 1772 at their meeting House to make answer to a committies leter of Correspondence and ye votes and proceedings of ye Inhabitants of ye Town of Boston beg leave to report. Gentlemen we carefully perrused your votes and proceedings and letter of corraspondence and cannot but agree with you in opinion that our rights are fairly and properly stated and also the grievinces under which we Labour and we hope such measures will be taken in a constitutional way as shall affectually redress the same and also prevent those which further threaten us; We are greatly alarmed

<sup>1</sup>Ib. 379.

<sup>m</sup>The Sandwich records give: John Fish of Sandwich and Anna Hawes of Falmouth, m. May 22, 1791. The Falmouth records say: John Fish of Sandwich and Anna Hawes of Falmouth, pub. May 3, 1800, and later m. by David Nye, Esq., giving no date of marriage. These records *may* be a confusion of the same transaction, and Anna may be a mistake for Hama. The Chatham records give the intention of marriage of Stephen Morten of Dartmouth and Ruhama Howes of Chatham Dec. 31, 1772. It is possible these two names may be Marten and Hawes. The Dartmouth records give the intention of Stephen Morton and Ruhamah Hawes, Dec. 31, 1772. The Elisha Leonard Papers, being copies of the Dartmouth records, read, Stephen Martin and Lurany Haws, Chatham, publ. Jan. 2, 1773. It is probable that the name here is really Ruhamah Howes, but if it is Hawes, then the intended marriage did not take place.

att the Governors being made Independent of ye grants of this province and at the prevelent report of ye Leftenant Govenors and judges of ye supearor Court of Judicature as also the Kings atorney and Silistor General being soon on ye same footing which if it should take affect (what will come next we know not but may safely gess) we cannot but think it hath a direct tendancy soon to compress our slaveres but what measures to advise to for redress we know not should there be a General assembly soon we should submit to them willingly but as we imagine there will be none soon and when we know not and when we compair the Governors answer to your petition No. 3 in your pamphlet what measures to take we are at a Loss. But as you are ye Metrophilus and have all ye acts of ye Government and of ye British parliment and the bills of rights with you we hope you will use your joint endeavors in a Constitutional way to save from impending ruin this distressed people and as we are willing to use our best endeavors to support Government so on ye other hand we are most concern for our Charter rights and Privilidges and as we look on our Sevil and Religous priveledges the sweetest and assentiel part of our Lives so we think when these are torn from us the remainder is scarce worth presarving therefor resolved to stand fermly as one man by our Charter priveledges in a Lawful constitutional way to all intents and purposes and we cannot but think that if we by any means could Exhibit a Pertition to ye Ears of our most Greatious Sovereign who is Equel the father of his american subjects as of his British subjects setting forth our unanimous complaints but that he would lend his Royal Ear to our humble prayer and redress our greevances so we his Majestyes dutiful and Loyal subjects conclude with our harty thanks to you for your letter of correspondence to our Selectmen and also to our representative. Gentlemen your Humble Servants James Covell. Paul Sears Seth Smith Samuel Collins Joseph Atwood John Hawes Barnabas Eldredge Thomas Hamilton Richard Sears." (Chatham Town Records, vol. 2, p. 208.)

12 JEREMIAH<sup>4</sup> (Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) HAWES, b. April 5, 1711; m. Phebe Young, of Eastham, Aug. 8, 1734." After

<sup>4</sup>Eastham Recs.

his marriage he resided in the part of Eastham, now Wellfleet, and died before Feb. 3, 1756, when Jonathan Young was appointed guardian for his minor son Jeremiah,<sup>o</sup> who was the ancestor of the Hawes family in Wellfleet. The younger Jeremiah served in the Coast Guards in the Revolutionary War.<sup>p</sup>

---

<sup>o</sup>7 Barn. Prob. Recs., 411.

<sup>p</sup>7 Mass. Soldiers & Sailors in War of Rev., 552.



## FIFTH GENERATION

13 THOMAS<sup>5</sup> (John,<sup>4</sup> Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) HAWES, b. April 10, 1744; m. \_\_\_\_\_; d. after Feb. 3, 1779, and before Dec. 24, 1780. He was a sea-captain, running South, where, according to the family tradition,<sup>q</sup> he married and died, but no record of his marriage or death has been found. He probably left issue, since a guardian for his heirs was appointed upon the settlement of his father's estate. He was on the payroll of the military forces of the Province in 1762 or 1763, but did not take active service.<sup>r</sup> Some of the entries under the name of Thomas Hawes (Haws) in vol. 7 of Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors in the War of the Revolution probably refer to him. March 14, 1774, he was chosen one of the tithingmen of Chatham.

14 JOHN<sup>5</sup> (John,<sup>4</sup> Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) HAWES, b. between Oct. 6, 1752, and Oct. 6, 1753; m.<sup>s</sup> Jan. 5, 1777, Mercy<sup>6</sup> (Samuel,<sup>5</sup> Nathaniel,<sup>4</sup> Stephen,<sup>3</sup> Giles,<sup>2</sup> Stephen,<sup>1</sup>) Hopkins; d. Oct. 6, 1824, in his 72nd year.<sup>u</sup> She was baptized in the Harwich (now Brewster) church June 3, 1759,<sup>v</sup> and died Jan. 27, 1834.<sup>w</sup> Early in life he was seafaring man, but later settled down to cultivating his farm, with incidental public and private business. He was deacon of the church for over 20 years. One of the selectmen seven years, from 1790, and town clerk and treasurer 20 years from 1803. He drew deeds and wills for his fellow townsmen and attended to the settlement of estates. He also taught school. A memorandum by him in the possession of the writer shows that he commenced school Dec. 14, 1797, in Thomas Taylor's house; Dec. 31, 1798, in Sylvanus Harding's house; and Dec. 25, 1795, at Amos Hard-

<sup>q</sup>Information given the writer by his aunt, Patience (Hawes) Howes.

<sup>r</sup>99 Mass. Archives, 234.

<sup>s</sup>Chat. Recs.

<sup>t</sup>Mayflower passengers.

<sup>u</sup>Gravestone inscription in Old Burying Ground, Chatham; 13 Mf. 176.

<sup>v</sup>10 Mf. 253; Church Recs.

ing's. In 1788, he was one of the appraisers of the estate of Samuel Taylor, the inventory being taken Feb. 8.<sup>o</sup> In 1781 he was tithingman. In 1788 and on other occasions he was on a committee to settle with the town treasurer and constable, and in 1789 on a committee to "direct" the representative to the General Court. He was moderator of the town meeting in 1790, and at other times thereafter. In 1793 he was constable and tax collector, and the same year agent to procure the Rev. Mr. Roby's wood and hay. In 1794 he was on a committee to fence the old burying ground. Sept. 28, 1795, he was appointed on a committee to consult the Rev.

A handwritten signature in cursive script that reads "John Hawes". The letters are dark and fluid, with a prominent 'J' and 'H'.

Signature of Deacon John Hawes  
to appraisal, 1788.

Mr. Roby respecting a dismissal and on another committee to dismiss him. On the same date he was appointed on a committee to invite five ministers to come from other towns to hold a day of fasting and prayer on Nov. 12 and to provide for their entertainment at the town's expense. In 1796 he was on a committee to agree with the Rev. Mr. Briggs. In 1798 he is styled Deacon, and is on a committee to keep order in the meeting house. He assisted in throwing up the intrenchments on Dorchester Heights in March, 1776, which brought about the evacuation of Boston. Many men went from Cape Cod at about that time to aid in driving the British from Boston, and returned after the evacuation. As a privateer he was one of the crew of a sloop commanded by a Captain Freeman of Harwich (the part now included in the town of Brewster), whose lieutenant was Joseph Doane, of Chatham, which sailed in 1777. She was soon captured by a British man-of-war, disguised as a merchantman, and the crew were carried to New York and thrown into the prison hulks there.<sup>o</sup> The Massachusetts Archives show that Nathaniel Freeman was given a commission as

<sup>o</sup>26 Barn. Prob. Recs., 452.

<sup>o</sup>The foregoing information as to the Revolutionary activity of John<sup>o</sup> Hawes was received from his son, James Hawes, the writer's father.

commander of the privateer sloop "Wolf" by order in Council of Sept. 13, 1776.<sup>7</sup> John Hawes, seaman of Cape Cod, was on the list of prisoners exchanged in R. I., dated Newport, Feb. 11, 1777.<sup>8</sup> John Hawes, Jr., was a private in Captain Thomas Hamilton's company stationed in Barnstable County for defense of the seacoast, serving from July 7 to Dec. 31, 1775.<sup>9</sup> Hamilton was of Chatham. It is likely that some other references in vol. 7 of Mass. Soldiers and Sailors refer to John<sup>5</sup> Hawes. The published U. S. census of 1790 names John Hawes as head of a family in Chatham, consisting of one adult male, 4 male children and 5 females. Letters of administration on his estate were granted to his son Samuel Jan. 11, 1825.<sup>10</sup> The widow's share was assigned Nov. 22, 1825.<sup>11</sup> The inventory March 5, 1825, mentions one half of his dwelling house, etc., in partnership with his son Samuel, \$263; all his lands \$1860; personal property, \$294.41.<sup>12</sup> The division, March 25, 1826, of the real estate of Deacon John Hawes mentions Ansel A. Kendrick.<sup>13</sup> Deacon Hawes had resided in his father's house until about 1805, when with his son Samuel, he built a double house (now standing) N. of the main road nearly opposite the old one.

*Children, born in Chatham.<sup>14</sup>*

A CHILD that d. about Dec. 21, 1778, when he is charged one pound and 14 shillings for making its coffin.<sup>15</sup>

15 SAMUEL, b. March 17, 1780.

16 JOHN, b. May 10, 1782.

THOMAS, b. Aug. 29, 1784; d. Dec. 5, 1800.<sup>16</sup>

ABIGAIL, b. March 6, 1787; m. Ansel A. Kendrick, of Harwich; lived in Dartmouth and died there Dec. 30, 1858, a widow.<sup>17</sup> She had a son Levi, who became captain of a

<sup>76</sup> Mass. Soldiers & Sailors in War of Rev., 47.

<sup>87</sup> Ib. 571.

<sup>9</sup>Ib. 533.

<sup>143</sup> Barn. Prob. Recs., 130.

<sup>145</sup> Ib. 278.

<sup>14</sup>Ib. 22.

<sup>15</sup>Ib. 204.

<sup>17</sup>Chat. Recs. and Deacon John Hawes's Family Rec. in possession of writer.

<sup>18</sup>Account book of Charles Atkins.

<sup>19</sup>Gravestone; 13 Mf. 176.

<sup>20</sup>Dartmouth Recs.

whale ship and died at sea without issue, and a daughter, Mercy Hawes, who m. David Gifford and had Levi K., David Lewis and Amie A. Gifford. Mercy H. Gifford d. in 1899, aged 86."

DAVID, b. April 21, 1789; frozen to death<sup>h</sup> on Nauset Beach Jan. 13, 1809; unmarried.

17 JOSEPH, b. July 25, 1791.

18 JAMES, b. Oct. 12, 1795.

PATIENCE, b. July 23, 1799; m. 1823 Seth Howes, of Chatham; d. March 10, 1881, a widow, the last survivor of Deacon Hawes's children.<sup>l</sup>

BETHIAH, b. Oct. 16, 1803; d. in Dartmouth unmarried, Sept. 7, 1860.<sup>l</sup>

---

<sup>h</sup>Levi K. Gifford m. Fannie Reynolds and moved to Kansas. His two children were recently living in Colorado. David L. Gifford became captain of a whale ship. He served in the Civil War both in the army and navy, and received a medal for bravery. He also received a medal and other testimonials for rescuing shipwrecked people. He died without issue. His widow, Eleanor J. Gifford, is living at South Dartmouth, Mass.

<sup>l</sup>Howes Genealogy by J. C. Howes (p. 111) erroneously makes her maiden name Howes. Ib. (p. 166) gives two of the three children of her son, Seth C. Howes. She had two daughters, Asubah, who m. Freeman Chase and Bethiah, who m. Jabez Crowell, of East Harwich. Her husband d. in 1838 (Barn. Prob. Recs.).

## SIXTH GENERATION

15 SAMUEL<sup>6</sup> (John,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>)  
HAWES, b. March 17, 1780; m. Oct. 27, 1804, Molly<sup>7</sup> (Samuel,<sup>6</sup>  
Nehemiah,<sup>5</sup> Thomas,<sup>4</sup> Thomas,<sup>3</sup> Ephraim,<sup>2</sup> John<sup>1</sup>) Doane; d.  
Oct. 1, 1861. She d. Dec. 2, 1860.

### *Children, all born in Chatham:*

BETSEY, b. Oct. 8, 1805; m. first Ebenezer Nickerson and  
second, Bangs Eldredge, of Harwich; no issue.

THOMAS, b. Jan. 22, 1808; m. Miriam Smith. He was a  
seafaring man, went away in 1838 and never returned.  
Two sons, Nathaniel and Thomas, lived and died in  
Chatham, leaving issue.

DIDAMY, b. April 6, 1810; m. Zelotus Wixon, of Dennis.

SAMUEL, b. July 31, 1811; m. Betsey, daughter of Daniel<sup>7</sup>  
Harding, of Chatham, by his first wife; d. at Nassau,  
Bahama Islands, Dec., 1864. His son, Sergeant Samuel  
Hawes, who served in the Civil War, resides in Chatham.

EDWARD, b. July 22, 1813; m. Jan. 31, 1837, Polly, daugh-  
ter of Nehemiah Kelley, of Dennis; d. July 12, 1888.  
His son Ebenezer resides in Chatham.

TABITHA, b. Aug. 2, 1815; d. Aug. 13, 1816.

TABITHA DOANE, b. July 14, 1817; m. Jonathan Kelley, of  
Dennis.

ZENAS, b. Aug. 20, 1819; m. Polly, daughter of Samuel  
Kelley, of Dennis; d. April 18, 1865, without issue.

MARY, b. May 25, 1823; m. first Joseph Kelley, of Dennis,  
and second Braddock Allen, of Harwich; no issue.

JOHN, b. July 20, 1825; m. Eliza Ann, daughter of David  
Kelley, of Dennis; d. Nov. 2, 1858, of yellow fever at  
Savannah, Ga., while mate of a vessel of which his cou-  
sin Reuben C. Hawes was master. His son John re-  
sides in Barnstable and his son Zenas in Chatham.

ESTHER DOANE, b. March 6, 1829; m. Charles B. Babcock,  
of Mansfield, Conn., no issue—All the children of Sam-  
uel<sup>6</sup> Hawes are deceased. The authority relied on is

chiefly his family record in the possession of his grandson Ebenezer Hawes. The town record differs in some particulars.

16 JOHN<sup>6</sup> (John,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) HAWES, b. May 10, 1782; m. Experience Ryder, int. Feb. 13, 1808;<sup>k</sup> d. of yellow fever at Port-au-Prince in 1825.<sup>l</sup>

*Children, all born in Chatham:*<sup>m</sup>

DAVID, b. Aug. 27, 1808; d. unmarried.

JOHN, b. Aug. 17, 1811; d. young.

POLLEY (Mary), b. Dec. 16, 1813; m. Henry Pitman, of Bristol, R. I.

MACY (Mercy) RYDER, b. Aug. 8, 1817; d. young.

JOHN, b. Nov. 12, 1819; d. young.

EXPERIENCE, b. Jan. 7, 1822; d. young.

17 JOSEPH<sup>6</sup> (John,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) HAWES, b. July 25, 1791; m.<sup>n</sup> Dec. 31, 1818, Elizabeth, daughter of Edward Kent, of Chatham, who d. Nov. 26, 1864. He d. 1825.<sup>o</sup>

*Children,<sup>n</sup> born in Chatham:*

PATIA, b. Aug. 22, 1819; d. March 3, 1820.

JOSEPH, b. June 19, 1821; m. Susan, daughter of Amos Harding, of Chatham; drowned at sea Oct. 5, 1868,<sup>p</sup> leaving issue.

REUBEN, birth recorded Apr. 2, 1822; d. young.

18 JAMES<sup>6</sup> (John,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) HAWES, born Oct. 12, 1795; married<sup>q</sup> first Susannah<sup>6</sup> (Reuben<sup>5</sup> Collins, Samuel,<sup>4</sup> Samuel,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Richard<sup>1</sup>) Taylor, Dec. 13, 1821 (int. Nov. 24, 1821), and second Desire Smith (daughter of Lemuel Hunt, who had married first Zoeth Ryder and

<sup>k</sup>Chat. Recs.

<sup>l</sup>40 Barn. Prob. Recs., 223.

<sup>m</sup>Chat. Recs. and family information.

<sup>n</sup>Chat. Recs.

<sup>o</sup>42 Barn. Prob. Recs., 153.

<sup>p</sup>211 State House Recs., 6.

<sup>q</sup>Chat. Recs. and his family rec.

<sup>r</sup>Her mother was Sally<sup>s</sup> (Sarah), daughter of William<sup>t</sup> (William,<sup>s</sup> Joseph,<sup>s</sup> Robert<sup>1</sup>) and Susannah or Susan (Atkins) Eldredge.

second Enoch Smith) Sept. 11, 1859; died Dec. 18, 1862. His first wife was born March 25, 1798, and died March 17, 1856. His second wife died March 23, 1873. His will, dated Dec. 4,



Signature of Reuben C. Taylor, 1786.

1862, was proved Feb. 10, 1863.\* His inventory, taken March 5, 1863, amounted to \$2,111.96, of which \$1490 represented real estate and \$621.96 personal property.† He went to sea for a livelihood during the earlier portion of his life. His seafaring life was limited to fishing and coasting voyages, with the exception of a voyage he made just after the close of the War of 1812 to Amsterdam, Holland. His first voyage was made in the spring of 1812 to the Banks, on which occasion the vessel in which he sailed was totally wrecked on Sable Island. On his fishing voyages he went also to the Strait of Belle Isle. When he returned from his first voyage war with England had been declared. He spent the greater part of the time during that war in Rhode Island on a farm, most of the time in the service of a Quaker. He was captain some years, and in that capacity was in Charleston, S. C., during the time of Nullification. He left the sea before he was forty and spent the rest of his life in farming, except that he engaged for a time in the ownership and fitting out of fishing vessels with his brother-in-law, Samuel Taylor. He was a member of the Congregational Church, but soon after 1850 separated and became a leader of the "Come-outers," who thought the Church too formal and worldly, who did not believe in a special ministry and who resembled the "Separatists" of a century before. They built a meeting house on his land, and the site was conveyed to trustees by deed‡ dated March 10, 1858. The movement was one of the ever recurring ones which emphasize the relations of the individual to the deity against the traditions and formalities of the church as an organization. The members, who exemplified their faith in their lives, died, and the meeting

\*96 Barn. Prob. Recs., 150; No. 4592.

†68 Barn. Deeds, 6.



RESIDENCE OF DEACON JOHN HAWES  
AND JAMES HAWES





house has long been removed. Mr. Hawes on different occasions acted as agent for his school district. After his first marriage he built a house on land south of the Cove which his wife's father had given her, and here his first child was born. After his father's death he sold this house to Edmund Young, and purchased the house and homestead of his father. The deeds were passed in 1826.\*

*James Hawes*

*Susanna Hawes*

Signature of James Hawes and his wife,  
Susannah, to a deed in 1847.

*Children, all by his first wife and all born in Chatham:*

19 REUBEN COLLINS, b. July 4, 1822.

SALLY (Sarah) Taylor, b. July 15, 1826; m. Christopher<sup>8</sup> (Christopher,<sup>7</sup> Richard,<sup>6</sup> George,<sup>5</sup> Stephen,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> Ralph<sup>1</sup>) Smith, Jan. 1, 1846. She d. July 21, 1898. He was b. Dec. 23, 1821, was a sea captain and then in business in Chatham, and d. Feb. 29, 1908. Their children, b. in Chatham, were Lucas, March 11, 1850, and William Christopher, Sept. 16, 1861. Lucas Smith m. Emma Frances Howes (daughter of Jonathan and Fanny, of Dennis), April 2, 1873. Child, Willetta Frances, b. Jan. 26, 1877. He has been in business in Boston. They live in Wakefield. William C. Smith m. in Chelsea Florence Ilsley, daughter of William R. and Bethiah Crocker (Ryder) Ilsley, Oct. 31, 1889. Children: Christopher Ilsley, b. at Melrose, March 1, 1893, and Marjorie Culbertson, b. at Chelsea, Nov. 30, 1897. Mr. Smith graduated at Harvard in 1885, practiced law for a time in Boston and at present resides in Chatham. He is the author of a history of Chatham.

MERCY, b. June 6, 1829; m. Ephraim<sup>8</sup> Smith (brother of Christopher<sup>8</sup> above), Feb. 6, 1849. She d. April 2,

---

\*1 Chatham Deeds, 12, and 2 Ib. 18, in Barn. Registry of Deeds.

1912. He was b. Oct. 23, 1824, and resides in Chatham. He was a sea captain and afterwards in business in Chatham and Boston. Their children, all born in Chatham, were Mercena, b. Nov. 11, 1849; Susan Taylor, b. June 29, 1851; Henry Osborne, b. Aug. 15, 1853, and d. April 21, 1875; Sarah Ann, b. April 11, 1856; Ephraim, b. June 8, 1858, and d. March 25, 1859. Susan T. Smith m. Horatio Danforth Perkins Newton (son of Dr. Adin Hubbard and Susan Anjennette [Hatch] Newton), Dec. 4, 1879. He d. while principal of the Franklin (grammar) school in Boston, Jan. 14, 1902. Their children: Mercy Osborne, b. Provincetown, March 13, 1881, and graduated at Boston University in 1904; Anjennette, b. Provincetown, Nov. 4, 1882, and graduated at Radcliffe College in 1905; Henry Sabin, b. in Taunton, Nov. 30, 1885, and d. Jan. 28, 1887; Adin Gerould, b. in East Boston, April 9, 1890. Sarah A. Smith graduated at Lasell Seminary and m. Fielding Schofield, April 25, 1883.

SUSANNAH, b. Feb. 27, 1833; m. Franklin<sup>8</sup> (George<sup>7</sup> W., Joshua,<sup>6</sup> Isaac,<sup>5</sup> Joseph,<sup>4</sup> Thomas,<sup>3</sup> Joseph,<sup>2</sup> Thomas<sup>1</sup>) Howes, a sea captain, Feb. 19, 1854. She d. Nov. 26, 1856. They had one child, Annah M., who d. Dec. 21, 1861, aged 6 years and 10 days. Capt. Howes afterwards m. Mercy B. Small, of Harwich, and d. May 7, 1885, leaving a numerous issue, the sons of which are in successful business in Boston.<sup>v</sup>

MEHITABLE, b. April 9, 1837; d. April 2, 1859.

20 JAMES<sup>7</sup> WILLIAM, b. July 9, 1844.

<sup>v</sup>See Howes Geneal. by J. C. Howes, 168.

## SEVENTH GENERATION

19 REUBEN<sup>7</sup> COLLINS (James,<sup>6</sup> John,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes, b. in Chatham, July 4, 1822; m. Sally<sup>8</sup> Ryder<sup>w</sup> (Daniel,<sup>7</sup> Seth,<sup>6</sup> Sylvanus,<sup>5</sup> Maziah,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Joseph,<sup>2</sup> Joseph<sup>1</sup>) Harding, Jan. 13, 1847. He was a sea captain and died of yellow fever in Savannah, Ga., Nov. 3, 1858. She d. July 27, 1864.

*Children, all born in Chatham:*

21 REUBEN COLLINS, b. May 29, 1849.

EUNICE HARDING, b. Nov. 3, 1851; m. Alvin Zenas, son of Zenas and Rhoda (Crowell) Atkins, Jan. 25, 1872. Their children, all born in Chatham: Ellen Erdine, b. Feb. 18, 1873, and d. June 16, 1878; Susie Clark, b. Feb. 23, 1875, and d. June 15, 1878; Zenas, b. Nov. 2, 1877, and d. June 12, 1878; Sadie Webster, b. Oct. 20, 1882, and d. Aug. 29, 1883; Gladys Perry, b. March 23, 1893.

22 DANIEL WEBSTER, b. Jan. 14, 1854.

23 ANDREW, b. Nov. 22, 1856.

20 JAMES<sup>7</sup> WILLIAM (James,<sup>6</sup> John,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes, b. July 9, 1844; m. in Lowell, Amelia Appleton, daughter of John W. and Nancy<sup>7</sup> Dyson<sup>w</sup> (Appleton) Prendergast, Oct. 14, 1873. In the summer of 1858 and 1859 he made two codfishing voyages to the Banks and in the spring of 1860 sailed from Boston to Charleston, S. C., and Savannah, Ga., with a view to a voyage to Beirut, Syria, but, having determined to go to college, he returned home from Savannah. He was in Charleston during the session of the Democratic National Convention. He received his early education in the district school of his native district, which was followed by preparation for college in the Chatham High School, which was established in 1858. He entered Harvard College in 1862 and graduated in 1866. After a year teaching in a preparatory school in Boston and a year in the Harvard Law School, he

---

<sup>w</sup>Her mother, Eunice Ryder, was her father's second wife. His first wife was Molly Eldredge.

<sup>e</sup>She was the daughter of Isaac,<sup>6</sup> (Samuel,<sup>5</sup> Isaac,<sup>4</sup> Isaac,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> Samuel<sup>1</sup>) Appleton and Nancy (Dyson) his wife.

was admitted to the bar in New York City in the autumn of 1868 and practiced law there until 1910, when he retired. He has continued to reside there, but has spent considerable time in European travel. He was an alderman in 1881 and 1882, president of the Phi Beta Kappa Alumni in New York in 1881, and of The Republican Club of the city of New York in 1882, 1883, and 1884. He was the Republican candidate for Justice of The City Court of New York in 1885 and the Anti-Tammany candidate for President of the Board of Aldermen (Vice-Mayor) in 1890. He was long active in political and reform movements in the city. He has also had considerable literary activity.<sup>y</sup>

---

<sup>y</sup>Sketches of him may be found in *History of the Bench and Bar of N. Y.* (1897), vol. 2, p. 191; *Lealie's History of the Greater N. Y.* (1898, et seq.), vol. 3, p. 284, and *Biographical Vol.*, p. 307; *Universities and Their Sons* (1900), vol. 5, p. 404; *Who's Who in New York City and State*; *Men of America* (1908); and *Who's Who in America*.

## EIGHTH GENERATION

**21 REUBEN<sup>8</sup> COLLINS** (Reuben<sup>7</sup> Collins, James,<sup>6</sup> John,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes, b. May 29, 1849; m. first in Winchester, Mary Frances Blaisdell Lowe, daughter of William Warren and Ruth Ann (Blaisdell) Lowe, of Charlestown, June 11, 1873. She d. June 9, 1882. He m. second in Winchester, Rachel, daughter of Joseph and Elizabeth (Hughes) Patterson, of Inverness, Quebec, Nov. 4, 1885. He is engaged in business in Winchester.

*Children by first wife, born in Winchester:*

GRACE FLORECE, b. Aug. 26, 1874; m. Nov. 21, 1906, James Smith Gray; d. Dec. 29, 1907.

MABEL SALLIE, b. Feb. 16, 1877; m. Sept. 24, 1907, Harry Edgar Carter; resides in West Medford.

**24 ELMER<sup>9</sup> COLLINS**, b. March 8, 1880; d. April 20, 1881.

**22 DANIEL<sup>8</sup> WEBSTER** (Reuben<sup>7</sup> Collins, James,<sup>6</sup> John,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes, b. Jan. 14, 1854; m. Minnie Morton, daughter of Marshall and Hulda Frances (Fogg) Gibbs, of Bridgton, Me., June 9, 1881. He is in business in Winchester.

*Children, born in Winchester:*

**25 JAMES<sup>9</sup> DANA**, b. July 8, 1882; died Sept. 18, 1882.

EDNA FRANCES, b. July 27, 1883.

**26 AUSTIN<sup>9</sup> WEBSTER**, b. Dec. 26, 1885; m. in Winchester, Marion Kilburn Carter, Jan. 23, 1911. He resides and is in business in South Framingham.

JESSIE STANTON, b. Sept. 25, 1889; d. Dec. 3, 1889.

**27 LORING<sup>9</sup> GIBBS**, b. Sept. 4, 1892.

**23 ANDREW<sup>8</sup>** (Reuben<sup>7</sup> Collins, James,<sup>6</sup> John,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Isaac,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>2</sup> Edmond<sup>1</sup>) Hawes, b. Nov. 22, 1856; m. first, Clara Denham, daughter of Noah and Louisiana Swett, of Wellfleet, in May, 1885. She d. Sept. 6, 1891. He m. second,

196 ANCESTORS AND DESCENDANTS OF EDMOND HAWES

Lena Frances, daughter of Horace Washburne and Harriet Frances Otis, of Watertown, Oct. 24, 1894. He resides and is in business in Watertown.

*Child, by second wife:*

28 OTIS<sup>9</sup> LAWRENCE, b. March 22, 1897.

## INDEX

- ARINGTON, 93  
 ALCHORNE, Marie, 111  
 ACTON, Thomas, 49  
 ADAMS, John, 108  
     Rev. Hugh, 165, 166, 169  
 AGINCOURT, 96, 137  
 ALDEN, John, 126, 127, 145  
 ALDRICH, Peter, 168  
 ALFRICK, 104  
 ALLEN, Braddock, 188  
     Mary, 188  
 ALLINGTON, 41, 109  
 ALMAR, 4  
 ALPHEGE, Saint, 6, 8,  
 ALSTONMORE, 116  
 ALSTON MOOR, 116  
 AMSTERDAM, Holland, 190  
 ANDOVER, Mass., 175  
 ANGEL, Joseph, 162  
 ANGERFIELD, John, 115  
 ANGLE, Angles, 3, 10  
 ANGLO-SAXON, 3, 6, 82  
 APPLETON, Isaac, 193  
     Nancy, 193  
     Nancy D., 193  
     Samuel, 193  
 ARCHER, Andrew, 39  
     Sir Symon (Simon), 22, 37, 42, 72  
 ARDEN, Forest of, 3  
 ARDEN, Joane, 99  
     Robert de, 66  
     William, 99  
 ARNULL, 4  
 ARUNDELL, Anne, 68  
     Elizabeth, 80, 84, 90  
     John, 80  
     Rawfre, 80, 84  
     Renfred, 80  
 ASHBORNE, 96  
 ASHBY St. Ledgers, 76, 98, 99, 100  
 ATKINS, Alvin Z., 193  
     Charles, 177, 186  
     Ellen E., 193  
     Eunice H., 193  
     Gladys P., 193  
     J. William, 177  
     Rhoda, 193  
 ATKINS, Sadie W., 193  
     Susan, 189  
     Susannah, 189  
     Susie C., 193  
     Thomas, 156, 171  
     Zenas, 193  
 ATKINSON, N. C., 163  
 ATWOOD, Agnes, 117  
     Bethiah, 169  
     Ephraim, 169  
     Hawes, 169  
     Joseph, 182  
     William, 117  
 AUDELEY, Elizabeth, 77  
     Thomas, 77  
 AVERREY, Richard, 25  
 AWEN, Rev. Alexander, 83  
 AYGELENBYE, Richard, 44  
 AYLESBURY, Agnes de, 73  
     Philip de, 73  
     Thomas, 29, 62  
 AYNSCOMBE, Maria, 109, 111  
     Thomas, 109, 111, 114, 115  
 BABCOCK, Charles B., 188  
     Esther D., 188  
 BACON, John, 149  
     Mary, 131, 141, 148, 149, 153  
     Nathaniel, 149  
     Sarah, 149  
 BADDESLEY Clinton, 19, 23, 24, 69, 71,  
     72, 73, 74, 76, 77, 78, 79, 81, 83,  
     84, 85, 86, 88, 89, 90, 92, 97, 100,  
     101  
     Clinton Church, 72, 79, 80, 82, 89  
     Clinton Hall, 70, 72, 77, 90  
     Ensor, 69  
 BAKER, Elizabeth, 41, 108, 110, 122  
     George, 99, 100  
     Joan, 117  
     John, 41, 108, 111, 122  
     Robert, 40, 110, 117, 122  
     Thomas, 42  
 BALDWIN, Richard, 38  
 BALLARD, Richard, 115  
 BALLY, Constance, 36  
     George, 36



- BALSALL, 88  
 BAME, William, 106  
 BANKS, Rev. Robert, 83  
 BANKS, Rev. Robert, 87, 89  
 BANKS, Charles E., 173  
 BARFORD, 81, 98  
 BARNSTABLE, Mass., 125, 126, 127,  
     142, 145, 147, 149, 166, 172,  
     178, 181, 188  
     County, 123, 129, 142, 148, 151, 186  
 BARROW Super Soar, 96  
 BARTLETT, Benjamin, 146  
 BASSET Arms, 95  
     Lord, 95, 96  
     Isabell, 95  
     Jocosa, 96  
     Joyse, 96  
     Ralph, 11, 95, 96  
     Thomas, 96  
 BASSETT, Nathan, 180  
 BATELL, 110, 112, 113  
 BAVAND, Rev. John, 20  
 BAWES, Edmund, 63  
 BAYHAM, 37, 40, 46, 106, 109, 111,  
     113, 114, 121, 122, 123  
 BAYLIES, Francis, 121  
 BEAUCHAMP, Thomas de, 74  
 BEAUFO, John, 81, 89  
     Margery, 81, 89  
 BECKET, Thomas à, 7  
 BEDFORD, Duke of, 77  
 BEDDHAM, Thomas, 137  
 BEIRUT, Syria, 193  
 BELCHAMP St. Paul, 121, 133, 134, 135  
 BELCHIER, William, 43½  
 BELKNAP, Edward, 85  
 BELLEDESERT, 102  
 BELLE ISLE, Strait of, 190  
 BELLINGHAM, Margery, 103  
 BENNETT, Cornelius, 164  
     Nicholas, 113  
 BERHAM, John, 111  
 BERKELEY, Cal., 177  
 BERKSWELL, 31  
 BERRY, William, 108  
 BERWICK on Tweed, 95  
     Thomas, 113  
 BEST, John, 43  
     Mary, 43  
 BEYNAM, Thomas, 13  
 BICKENHILL, 88  
 BICKLEY, W. B., 10, 12  
 BIDENDON, 116  
 BILDWAS, 94  
 BIRCHES, John atte, 10, 11  
     William atte, 10, 11  
 BIRMINGHAM, 3, 5, 10, 32, 136, 143  
 BISHOPDON, William de, 12  
 BISHOPDON, Phillippa de, 100  
 BISHOPDON, William de, 100  
 BLACKLEACH, Ann, 159  
     Joseph, 159  
 BLACKWELL, Edmond, 105  
 BLAISDELL, Ruth A., 195  
 BLAKEFIELDS (or Blackfields), 49  
 BLAKENALL, John, 47  
 BLOKHAM, 36, 46  
 BLOKWICH, 25  
 BLUN, Anne, 64  
     Thomas, 64  
 BLUNT, Richard, 27, 59  
 BOARDMAN, Lucy, 130  
     Thomas, 124, 129, 130, 147  
 BODDINGTON, Samuel, 32  
 BOROUGH, The, 4, 5  
 BOSTON, 123, 133, 148, 157, 166, 170,  
     178, 181, 185, 191, 192, 193  
     University, 192  
 BOSTWICK, Zadock, 175  
 BOTHE, John, 78  
 BOTTE, Anne, 63  
     Humphrey, 63  
 BOTTESFORD, 10  
 BOURNE, Thomas, 126  
 BOVY, Sir Ralph, 30, 42  
 BOWATER, Katherine, 23  
 BOWDOIN College, 165  
 BOWKLEY, Richard, 17, 18  
 BOYLESTONE, 95  
 BRADFORD, William, 145  
 BRADWELL, 107  
 BRADYSHELL Greene, 112  
 BRAILSFORD, 96  
 BRANSFORD, 104, 105  
 BREDENBURY Court, 32  
 BREME, John, 76  
 BRENCHELY, 112, 113, 114, 117  
 BREWS, Beatrix De, 95  
     Sir John de, 95  
 BREWSTER, Mass., 172, 184, 185  
 BRIDGEPORT, Conn., 161  
 BRIDGES, John, 98, 99, 100

- BRIDGEWATER, Mass., 164  
 BRIDGTON, Me., 195  
 BRIGGS, Rev. Mr., 185  
 BRISTOL, R. I., 149, 157, 174, 189  
 BROCKHURST, John, 52  
     Mary, 64  
     Thomas, 27, 59  
 BROME, (Bromes), 76, 84,  
     Arms, 73, 76  
     Epitaphs or Inscriptions, 75, 79,  
         80, 81, 82, 83, 84  
     Family, 73  
     Hall, 73, 74, 78, 90  
     Inquisitions, 78, 85  
     Place, 73, 74, 77  
     Wills, 44, 86, 87  
     Agnes, 78, 79  
     Alice, 89  
     Anna, Ann, or Anne, 44, 89, 91  
     Beatrice (Beatrix), 77, 79, 80,  
         81, 84, 97  
     Catharine, 89, 90  
     Cecilia, 91  
     Constance, 84, 86, 87, 89, 90  
     Dorothy, 90  
     Denys, 76  
     Edward, 81, 87, 88, 89  
     Elizabeth, 15, 18, 19, 23, 24, 43½,  
         77, 78, 79, 80, 83, 84, 86, 88,  
         89, 90  
     Eustace, 79  
     Gertrude, 44, 89  
     Havis, 76  
     Isabella, 80, 84, 86, 87, 88, 91  
     Jane, 79, 85  
     Johan, 85  
     Jocosa, 18, 78, 80, 90  
     Johanna or Joan, 74, 79, 90, 92  
     John, 69, 70, 71, 73, 74, 75, 76,  
         77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 84, 92,  
         97, 102  
     John de, 73  
     Joyce, 24, 44, 90  
     Katheren (Katherine), 44, 80,  
         81, 85, 88, 89  
     Lettice, 80, 81, 90  
     Margery or Margaret, 76, 77, 81,  
         89, 102  
     Maria, 91  
     Nicholas, 19, 23, 24, 25, 27, 43½,  
         69, 73, 76, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82,  
         83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 90,  
         100, 101  
 BROME, Parnell, 76  
     Paulinus de, 73, 77  
     Ralph or Rauffe, 23, 27, 44, 81, 87,  
         89, 90  
     Reginald, 23, 27, 44, 89  
     Richard, 91  
     Robert, 74, 76, 78  
     Roger de, 73  
     Thomas, 44, 75, 78, 79, 85, 89  
     William, 39, 44, 76, 78, 89  
 BROMES Manor, 85  
 BROMLEY, Alice, 36, 66  
     Henry, 36, 66  
     Margaret, 36, 66  
 BROMSGROVE, 36, 46  
 BROMYARD, 32  
 BRON, William, 75  
 BROOKE, Margery, 76  
     William, 76  
 BROWN, Beatrice, 78  
     Jeffry, 76  
     John, 76, 78  
     Robert, 76  
 BROWN University, 174  
     John, 74  
     Joseph, 176  
     Zibiah, 176  
 BROWNE (Brome), Elizabeth, 45  
     Christopher, 134  
     (Brome), Nicholas, 45, 100  
     (Brome), Reginald, 59  
 BRUDNETT, Robert, 85  
 BRUNSWICK (N. H., Vt.), 160  
 BRYANT, Stephen, 146  
 BUCKINGHAMSHIRE, 107  
 BUDBROOKE, 86  
 BURDET, Johanna, 101  
     Thomas, 12, 78, 100  
 BURSSELL, James, 139  
 BURSTA, James, 139  
 BYEWATER, Thomas, 137  
 CALDEFORD's Tenement, 12  
 CALDMORE, 24  
 CALMADY, Anne, 110  
     Josiah, 110  
 CAMM, Dom Bede, 66  
 CANTERBURY, 6, 7, 17, 89, 105, 113, 115,  
     121  
 CAPE Cod, Mass., 129, 148, 150, 170,  
     175, 185, 186  
     Fear, N. C., 163

- CARMELITES, 75**  
**CARTER, Harry E., 195**  
     Mabel S., 195  
     Marion K., 195  
**CARVER, Robert, 124**  
**CATESBY Arms, 98**  
     Epitaph, 100  
     Alice, 100  
     Elizabeth, 102, 103  
     Emma, 99, 100  
     Emma de, 99  
     George, 84, 85  
     Joane, 99  
     John, 77, 78, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102  
     John de, 76, 77, 99  
     Lettice, 80, 90, 100, 102  
     Margaret, 78, 100, 101  
     Nicholas, 70, 80, 99, 100, 101,  
         102, 103  
     Philippa, 100  
     Phillip de, 99  
     Randolph de, 99  
     Reginald, 99  
     Richard, 100, 103  
     Robert, 69, 70, 78, 99, 100, 101,  
         102, 103  
     Roger, 99  
     Simon, 99  
     Simon de, 99  
     William, 78, 79, 84, 98, 99, 100,  
         101, 102  
     William de, 98, 99  
**CAVE, Richard, 105**  
     William, 137  
**CELTIC, 3**  
**CHAMBER, Margaret, 21, 23, 50**  
     Walter, 21, 23, 50  
**CHANON, William, 41, 42**  
**CHAPPAQUIDDICK Island, Mass., 173**  
**CHARLES I., 133, 135, 136, 137**  
     II., 133  
**CHARLESTON, S. C., 190, 193**  
**CHARLESTOWN, Mass., 195**  
**CHASE, Azubah, 187**  
     Freeman, 187  
     Goodman, 126  
     William, 127  
**CHATHAM, Mass., 127, 132, 156, 165,**  
     166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172,  
     175, 177, 179, 180, 181, 182, 184,  
     185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 191, 192,  
     193  
**CHELSEA, Mass., 191**  
**CHESTER, Earl of, 99**  
**CHILLINGWORTH, Thomas, 126**  
**CHOCKNELL, 105**  
**CLAINES, 105**  
**CLARKE, William, 128**  
**CLINTON, Lord of, 86**  
     Thomas de, 69  
**CLUTTERBUCK, Robert, 116**  
**COR, Francis, 137**  
**COCKLE Cove (Chatham, Mass.), 169,**  
     179, 191  
**COKAIN, Alice, 96**  
     Dorothy, 89  
     Francis, 89  
     Sir John, 96  
     Sir Thomas, 89  
**COKKES, Thomas, 77, 78**  
**COLE, Daniel, 124, 126**  
     William, 104  
**COLEMAN, Robert, 16**  
**COLES, 134, 135**  
**COLESHILL, 69**  
**COLLES Arms, 104**  
     Epitaphs, 105, 107  
     Place, 104  
     Will, 105  
     Alice, 104, 107  
     Anne, 106, 107  
     Dorothy, 107  
     Edmund (Edmond), 20, 49, 106, 107  
     Elizabeth, 106, 107  
     Humphrey, 27, 29, 37, 40, 59, 61,  
         62, 107  
     Isabel, 104  
     Jane, 106, 107  
     John, 105, 106, 107  
     Margaret, 20, 49, 104, 105  
     Mary, 107  
     Michael, 27, 28, 59, 61, 105, 106, 107  
     Richard, 104  
     Ursula, 15, 20, 22, 25, 33, 36, 43½,  
         46, 106, 107  
     William, 25, 43½, 46, 104, 105, 106,  
         107  
**COLLIER, Mary, 168**  
     William, 168  
**COLLINS, John, 171, 172, 178**  
     Samuel, 182  
     Thankful, 178  
**COLLYARE, William, 145**  
**COLORADO, 187**

- COLSTON-BASSET, 96  
 COME-OUTERS, 190  
 COMPTON Wynyates, 70  
 CONNECTICUT, 67, 117, 160, 176  
 CONNECTICUT River, 160  
 COOK, Adam, 12  
     John le, 11  
     Walter, 12  
 COOPER, William, 122  
 CORNWALL, 80, 84  
 CORP, John, 157  
 COTTERELL, Ellen, 63  
     William, 52  
 COUGHTON, 37  
 COVELL, Ephraim, 166  
     James, 172, 179, 180, 182  
     Joseph, 166, 171  
     Nathaniel, 166  
     Sarah, 169  
     Simeon, 172  
     William, 166  
 COVENTRY, 21, 51, 80, 82, 86, 98, 99  
     Lord of, 99  
 COVENTRY, Lord of, 99  
 COWEN, Desire, 150  
     John, 150  
 COWING, Desire, 150  
     John, 150  
 CRADLEY, 107  
 CRANFORD, Emma, 100  
     Robert, 100  
 CRISTINA, 4  
 CROCKER, Edward W., 130  
 CROMWELL, Lord of, 77  
     Oliver, 133  
 CROW, John, 126, 127, 128, 139  
 CROWELL, Bethiah, 187  
     Jabez, 187  
     Joseph, 171  
     Paul, 171, 172  
     Rhoda, 193  
 CROWHURST, 108  
 CROXON, Constance C., 73  
     Henry Ferrers, 73  
 CRUMP, Roger, 105  
 CUFTES, 135  
 CUMBERLAND, 116  
 CURTIS, Agnes, 25  
     George, 25  
     John, 25  
 CUTLERS' COMPANY, 122, 136, 137  
     Arms, 138  
 DADLY, Margaret, 66  
 DAGGETT, Elizabeth, 149  
     Thomas, 149  
 DALEY, Constance, 36, 46  
     George, 36, 46  
 DALLY, Dorothy, 107  
     William, 107  
 DAN, Gerard, 100  
 DANBY, N. Y., 176  
 DANES, 3, 7  
 DARBY, John, 127  
 DARLEY, 94  
 DARTMOUTH, Mass., 174, 181, 186, 187  
 DAUBENTY, William, 10  
 DAVIS, William, 137  
     W. P., 130, 149, 164  
 DECORAH, Iowa, 161  
 DENNIS, Mass., 188, 191  
     Pond (Yarmouth, Mass.), 126, 132, 148  
     Robert, 126  
 DENTON, Isabella, 80  
     John, 80  
     Thomas, 87  
 DERBY, 96  
     Earls of, 93  
 DERBYSHIRE, 3, 10, 93, 94, 95, 96  
 DERING, Edward H., 72  
     Rebecca D., 73  
 DEVON, 110  
 DEVONSHIRE, 104  
 DEXTER, John, 157, 158  
     Mary, 157  
 DEYO, Simeon L., 121, 123, 130, 148, 156, 167  
 DIGBY, Ambrose, 44  
     Anne, 89  
     Anthony, 44  
     Kenelm, 44  
     Reginald, 89  
 DOANE, Abigail, 177  
     Alfred A., 177  
     Ephraim, 177, 188  
     John, 177, 188  
     Joseph, 180, 185  
     Molly, 188  
     Nehemiah, 188  
     Samuel, 188  
     Thomas, 166, 177, 188  
 "DOCKTERS Wares" (Yarmouth, Mass.), 129

- DOGGETT, Elizabeth, 131, 141, 146, 149, 153  
     Thomas, 149  
 DOMESDAY Book of Survey, 4, 7, 93  
 DONNINGTON Castle, 96  
 DORCHESTER Heights, Mass., 185  
 DOVERDALE, 107  
 DRAKE, Samuel G., 122  
 DRAPER, Margery, 103  
     Thomas, 103  
 DRAYTON, 11, 95, 96  
 DRESSELLTREE, 23  
 DUGDALE, Sir William, 4, 5, 7, 9, 12, 13, 14, 22, 23, 24, 26, 42, 66, 69, 72, 74, 76, 79, 80, 81, 83, 84, 89, 92, 93, 96, 98, 99, 100, 102,  
 DUKES County, Mass., 173  
 DUNTON, 96  
 DUTCHESS County, N. Y., 175  
 DUXBURY, Mass., 123, 124, 125, 130, 131, 132, 145, 168  
 DYSON, Nancy, 193  
 EDMUND Ironside, 4  
 EDNESBOURE, 94  
 EDWARD the Confessor, 4  
     I., 95, 98  
     II., 31, 95  
     III., 11, 14, 42, 98  
     IV., 31, 74, 82, 90  
     VI., 105  
 EAST Boston, 192  
 EASTCOTE, 12  
 EASTHALL, 96  
 EASTHAM, Mass., 145, 146, 166, 169, 170, 177, 182, 183  
 EAST HARWICH, Mass., 179, 187  
     Peckham, 89  
 EATENDON, 95  
 EATHORPE, 86, 87  
 EATINGTON, 77, 93, 94  
 EDGARTOWN, Mass., 149, 165, 172, 173  
 EDGBASTON, 79  
 EDGECOTT, 11  
 EDLICOT, 22, 31, 44, 45  
 EDWARDS, Elizabeth, 117  
     John, 117  
 EDWIN, 4  
 EGLOSHAYLE (Eggleshole), 80, 84  
 ELA, 4  
 ELDRED, William, 139  
 ELDRIDGE, Bangs, 188  
 ELDRIDGE, Barnabas, 179, 182  
     Betsy, 188  
     Joseph, 166, 189  
     Molly, 193  
     Nicholas, 147  
     Robert, 189  
     Sally, 189  
     Sarah, 189  
     Susan, 189  
     Susannah, 189  
     William, 166, 189  
 ELFFRED, John, 44  
 ELIZABETH, Queen, 24, 47  
 ELLIS, Abigail, 180  
     Joshua, 180  
 ELMDON, 39, 40  
 ELYOT, Sir Thomas, 19  
 EMERY, Cyrus, 166  
     Rev. Stephen, 177, 178  
 EMERY'S Pond (Chatham, Mass.), 166  
 EMMINGTON Church, 117  
 EMSCOTE, 69, 81, 89  
 ESSEY, John de, 98  
     William de, 98  
 ESSEX, 121, 133, 134, 135, 136  
 EVANS, Edward, 158  
 EXETER, 80  
 EYEWYTT, Roger, 21, 51  
 FALMOUTH, Mass., 181  
 FECKENHAM, John, 19  
 FECKMAN, John, 19  
 FERRIERS, Henry de, 93  
 FERRERS, Earl, 94  
     Constance, 24, 81, 83, 86, 87, 88, 89  
     90  
     Constance C., 73  
     Dorothy, 89  
     Edward, 72, 81, 83, 86, 87, 89  
     Henry, 24, 26, 72, 81, 87, 89  
     Henry Ferrers, 73  
     Sir Humphrey, 89  
     John, 85, 86  
     Marmion E., 72, 73  
     Rebecca D., 72, 73  
 FIELD, Thomas, 157  
 FIFIELD, John, 22, 36  
 FINNEY, Robert, 146  
 FISH, John, 181  
     Ruhamah, 181  
 FLECKNOE, 99  
 FLEMISH, 4

- FOGG, Huldah F., 195  
 FOLLAND, Thomas, 129  
 FORD Land, 112  
 FOREST of Arden, 3  
 FORSHAW, 4, 5,  
 FOSTER, Rev. William, 83  
 FOWLE, Anthony, 110  
     Elizabeth, 110  
 FOWLER, Robert, 137  
 FRANCHE, Sir Leventhorpe, 122, 135  
 FRANT, 110  
     Church, 110  
 FREEBODY, Dionisia, 109  
 FREEMAN, Edmond, 126  
     Frederick, 128, 147, 148, 156, 167  
     Nathaniel, 185  
 FREER, John, 135  
 FROWYK, Thomas, 86, 87  
 FULCHER (Shirley), 94  
 FULLER, Matthew, 147  
 FULWELL, Francis, 137
- GALES, 106  
 GAUNT, John of, 96  
 GERARDES, Thomas de, 13  
 GERNON, Hugo, 99  
     Randolph, 99  
 GIBBONS, Ann (Anne), 19, 21, 51  
 GIBBS, Hulda F., 195  
     Marshall, 195  
     Minnie M., 195  
     Robert, 163  
 GIFFORD, Amie A., 187  
     David, 187  
     David L., 187  
     Eleanor J., 187  
     Fannie, 187  
     Levi K., 187  
     Mercy H., 187  
 GILES, Agnes, 116  
     John, 116  
 GILLET, John, 115  
 GLOUCESTER, 18  
 GLOUCESTERSHIRE, 3, 18, 80, 105  
 GODFREY, Jonathan, 172  
 GOODMAN, Mary, 110  
     Thomas, 110  
 GOOSE Pond (Chatham, Mass.), 166  
 GORHAM, Desire, 145, 147, 148, 151  
     Capt. John, 145, 148  
     Col. John, 148  
     Major John, 149, 153
- GORHAM, Joseph, 159  
     Lydia, 149  
 GORUM, Shubael, 174  
 GOSWAY, Joyce (Jeys), 25  
 GOUDHURST, 109, 114  
 GRANGE, Isabel, 66  
     John, 66  
 GRAVES, Mr., 123  
 GRAY, Grace F., 195  
     Harrison, 178  
     James S., 195  
     John, 146  
 GRAZEBROOK, H. Sydney, 13, 67, 104,  
     106, 107  
 GREAT Malvern, 105  
     Marshes, Mass., 181  
     Tew, 18  
 GREEN, Asher, 176  
     Everard, 45, 46  
     Susannah, 176  
 GREENWICH, 117  
 GRESWOLD Arms, 67  
     Ann, 14, 15, 32, 43½, 67  
     Anne, 67  
     Christian, 67, 68  
     Christiana, 66  
     Edwin, 67  
     Elizabeth, 67  
     Isabel, 66  
     John, 12, 17, 31, 36, 43½, 66, 67, 68  
     Margaret, 36, 66, 67  
     Margeria, 67  
     Ralph, 66  
     Richard, 12, 66, 67  
     Robert, 13, 17, 67  
     Roger, 67  
     Thomas, 20, 21, 47, 48, 49, 66, 67, 68  
     William, 66, 67, 68  
 GRESWOLDE-WILLIAMS, F. W., 32  
 GREVILLE, Edward, 80, 87  
 GREVES, Sir Richard, 37  
 GRIMLEY, 105  
 GRISWOLD, Edward, 67  
     Mathew, 67  
 GROME, William, 66  
 GRUMMAN, William E., 176  
 GUILFORD, Conn., 117  
 GUILSBORO, 43½
- HABINGTON, Thomas, 104, 105, 106,  
     107  
 HADDAM, Conn., 169, 170

- HALL, Bethiah, 163  
     Gershom, 163  
     John, 17  
     Joyce, 19  
     Margaret, 104  
     Margery, 18  
     Richard, 78  
     Thomas, 104  
     William, 162  
 HALLETT, Andrew, 125, 130, 132  
     John, 131, 140, 162  
 HALLET, Jonathan, 168  
 HALTON, 76  
 HALWIN, Havis, 76  
     William, 76  
 HAMBURY, 36, 46  
 HAMILTON, Daniel, 156  
     Thomas, 182, 186  
 HAMPER, William, 14, 24, 42, 67, 90  
 HAMPSHIRE, 109  
 HAMPTON in Arden, 107  
 HANNETT, John, 5, 9, 15, 16, 17, 30,  
     32, 66, 67, 74, 101  
 HARDING, Amos, 184, 189  
     Bethiah, 169  
     Betsey, 188  
     Daniel, 188, 193  
     Desire, 169  
     Eunice, 193  
     Joseph, 193  
     Maziah, 169, 193  
     Molly, 193  
     Nehemiah, 172  
     Prence, 169  
     Sally R., 193  
     Seth, 193  
     Susan, 189  
     Sylvanus, 179, 184, 193  
 HAROLD, 4  
 HARRIS, Thomas, 115  
 HARTE, Thomas, 137  
 HARTS, Richard, 105  
 HARVARD College, 164, 174, 191, 193  
 HARWICH, Mass., 163, 166, 172, 179,  
     184, 185, 186, 188, 192  
 HASTED, Edward, 109, 116  
 HATCH, Desire, 150  
     Josiah, 150  
     Samuel, 150  
     Susan A., 192  
     Walter, 150  
     William, 150  
 HATFIELD Court, 107  
 HATHAWAY, John, 199, 141  
 HATLEY, 23, 43½, 50  
 HATTFIELD Brodocks, 135  
 HATTON, 17  
 HAULL, Richard, 19  
 HAUCS, Agnes, 13  
     Isabelle, 13  
     Joan, 13  
     Katrina, 13  
     Nicholas, 13  
     Richard, 13  
     Thomas, 13  
 HAW, Adam de, 11, 14  
     Elizabeth, 43½, 63  
     Joan, 15  
     Johanna, 12  
     John, 12, 25  
     Mary, 64  
     Sara, 64  
     Thomas, 15, 24, 43½, 63, 64  
     William de, 10  
 HAWAN, William, 64  
 HAWCE, Agnes, 13, 64  
     William, 13  
 HAWZ, Agnes, 13, 63  
     Alice, 13, 64  
     Anne (Ann), 43½, 62, 63, 64, 65  
     Arthur, 63, 64, 134  
     Catherine, 12, 14  
     Christian, 64  
     Edmund, 63, 133, 135, 136  
     Edward, 62, 63, 64  
     Elizabeth, 12, 13, 17, 24, 25, 63, 64,  
         65, 83  
     Ellen, 62, 63, 64  
     Frances, 62, 121  
     George, 24, 25, 63  
     Humphry, 63  
     Isabel, 12  
     Jane, 62, 63, 64  
     (Haw) Jeyes, 25  
     Joan, 13, 24, 25, 62, 63, 64  
     Johanna, 12  
     Johanne, 18  
     John, 11, 12, 13, 14, 24, 25, 42, 43½,  
         62, 63, 64, 65  
     Jose, 18  
     Joyce, 25  
     Joyce (Joys), 18, 25  
     Katherine, 62, 63  
     Lucy, 63

- Hawe, Margaret**, 12, 14, 16, 63  
**Margery**, 18, 62, 64  
**Maria**, 64  
**Mary**, 62, 63  
**Nicholas**, 24, 25  
**Richard**, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 17, 18, 23, 63, 64  
**Richard de**, 10  
**Robert**, 10, 13, 14, 62, 64  
**Sara**, 63, 65  
**Thomas**, 12, 13, 14, 16, 17, 18, 20, 24, 25, 43½, 47, 62, 63, 64, 65, 83  
**Ursula**, 43½  
**William**, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 18, 43½, 56, 62, 63, 64, 65  
**Winifred**, 62  
**Yewen**, 62
- Hawes Arms**, 13, 42, 45, 46  
**Deed**, 135  
**Family**, 7  
**Inscription**, 29, 33-35  
**Inventories**, 20, 26, 29, 52, 60, 131, 142, 149, 153  
**Lane (Yarmouth, Mass.)**, 126, 130, 132  
**Motto**, 29  
**Name**, 9  
**Neck (Yarmouth, Mass.)**, 130  
**Pedigree**, 14, 44, 46  
**Wills**, 16, 17, 18, 20, 26, 28, 47, 56, 60, 131, 133, 139, 148, 151  
**Abigail**, 176  
**Alice**, 36, 62, 66  
**Amelia A.**, 193  
**Andrew**, 193, 195  
**Ann**, 15, 19, 32, 43, 63, 64, 67  
**Anna**, 46, 181  
**Annah**, 180  
**Anne**, 63, 161  
**Arthur**, 134, 135  
**Austin W.**, 195  
**Bays**, 167  
**Benjamin**, 131, 141, 148, 150, 153, 167, 172, 173, 174  
**Bethiah**, 163, 164, 167, 168, 169, 171, 180, 187  
**Betsey**, 188  
**Catherine**, 15, 19  
**Clara D.**, 195  
**Constance**, 22, 26, 27, 28, 29, 36, 45, 46, 57, 60, 61, 62  
**Damaris**, 43
- Hawes, Daniel P.**, 161  
**Daniel W.**, 193, 195  
**David**, 164, 187, 189  
**Desire**, 131, 141, 145, 148, 150, 151, 152, 153, 164, 167, 169, 174, 189  
**Didamy**, 188  
**Dorcas**, 172, 173  
**Ebeneszer**, 131, 141, 148, 149, 150, 152, 156, 165, 167, 168, 174, 177, 188, 189  
**Edmond**, 3, 14, 15, 16, 26, 27, 28, 29, 31, 36, 37, 38, 41, 42, 43, 43½, 44, 45, 46, 57, 61, 63, 110, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 139, 141, 142, 143, 145, 148, 149, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 167, 172, 175, 177, 182, 184, 188, 189, 193, 195  
**Edmund A.**, 163  
**Edmund V.**, 161  
**Edna F.**, 195  
**Edward**, 31, 43½, 121, 161, 188  
**Elinor**, 19, 21, 22, 51  
**Elizabeth**, 15, 17, 18, 19, 20, 22, 36, 43, 43½, 45, 46, 62, 63, 64, 89, 130, 131, 141, 148, 149, 153, 164, 189  
**Elmer C.**, 195  
**Esther D.**, 188  
**Eunice**, 176  
**Eunice H.**, 193  
**Euphemia A.**, 165  
**Experience**, 131, 141, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 173, 174, 189  
**Francis**, 121, 133, 134, 135  
**George**, 24, 62, 65  
**Grace F.**, 195  
**Granville P.**, 165  
**Hannah**, 169, 175, 176  
**Harrie**, 16  
**Horace**, 176  
**Isaac**, 131, 141, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 156, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 175, 176, 177, 178, 182, 184, 188, 189, 193, 195  
**Jabez**, 131, 141, 149, 167  
**Jacob**, 167  
**James**, 185, 187, 189, 191, 193, 195  
**James A.**, 165  
**James D.**, 195  
**James W.**, 192, 193



- HAWES, Jane**, 15, 28, 37, 41, 42, 43, 46, 60, 61, 110, 121  
**Jedidah**, 173, 174  
**Jeremiah**, 121, 169, 182, 183  
**Jessie S.**, 195  
**Joan**, 15, 63  
**Johanna**, 15, 17, 45  
**John**, 15, 16, 17, 24, 41, 42, 43, 46, 63, 65, 131, 132, 140, 141, 142, 143, 145, 146, 148, 149, 151, 153, 156, 157, 158, 162, 163, 165, 167, 168, 169, 172, 174, 175, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 193, 195  
**John A.**, 174  
**John R.**, 163  
**Joseph**, 131, 140, 142, 148, 149, 151, 152, 153, 163, 164, 165, 168, 187, 189  
**Joshua**, 165  
**Rev. Josiah**, 176  
**Lena F.**, 196  
**Loring G.**, 195  
**Lowman**, 176  
**Lucy**, 43, 46, 130  
**Lurany**, 181  
**Mabel S.**, 195  
**Macy R.**, 189  
**Marcus M.**, 174  
**Margaret**, 15, 17, 23, 45  
**Margery**, 18  
**Maria**, 174  
**Marion K.**, 195  
**Mary**, 41, 43, 46, 63, 131, 141, 148, 149, 153, 156, 157, 158, 159, 162, 163, 164, 168, 174, 188, 189  
**Mary F. B.**, 195  
**Mehitable**, 192  
**Mercy**, 184, 187, 191  
**Mercy R.**, 189  
**Minnie M.**, 195  
**Miriam**, 188  
**Molly**, 188  
**Nathaniel**, 188  
**Newton**, 176  
**Nicholas**, 24  
**Otis L.**, 196  
**Patia**, 189  
**Polly**, 188, 189  
**Patience**, 169, 180, 181, 184, 187  
**Phebe**, 182  
**Prince**, 164, 175, 176, 177
- HAWES, Rachel**, 195  
**Rebecca W.**, 174  
**Reuben**, 189  
**Reuben C.**, 188, 191, 193, 195  
**Richard**, 15, 17, 18, 24, 64  
**Ruhamah**, 180, 181  
**Ruth**, 41, 43, 46, 63, 167  
**Sally R.**, 193  
**Sally T.**, 191  
**Samuel**, 173, 174, 176, 180, 186, 188  
**Sarah**, 162, 164, 165, 169, 170  
**Sarah T.**, 191  
**Shubael**, 173, 174  
**Solomon**, 167  
**Susan**, 189  
**Susanna**, 161  
**Susannah**, 176, 180, 191, 192  
**Tabitha**, 188  
**Tabitha D.**, 188  
**Temperance**, 164  
**Thankful**, 164, 169  
**Thomas**, 9, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 21, 22, 23, 31, 32, 36, 43, 43½, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 51, 52, 62, 67, 80, 121, 164, 165, 180, 181, 184, 186, 188  
**Ursula**, 15, 20, 22, 25, 26, 28, 32, 33, 36, 41, 43, 46, 57, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 107  
**Welles**, 177  
**William**, 15, 17, 18, 20, 21, 22, 23, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 31, 32, 33, 35, 36, 37, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 49, 50, 56, 59, 60, 61, 64, 66, 68, 107  
**William T.**, 174  
**Zenas**, 188  
**Zibiah**, 176  
**Zurviah**, 176
- HAWKINS, Anne**, 158, 159, 161  
**Edward**, 158  
**John**, 158  
**Mary**, 158  
**William**, 158
- HAWLEY, Ann**, 159  
**Samuel**, 159
- HAWES, Johanna**, 13  
**Robert**, 13  
**William**, 13
- HAXALL, Joan**, 15  
**Thomas**, 15, 24
- HAYS, Edmund**, 159  
**HAYWARD, John**, 111

- HEDZ, Daniel, 160  
 HEDGE, Elisha, 147  
     William, 128  
 HEELING, Joseph, 62  
 HEMLINGFORD, 4, 22, 42, 44  
 HEMPSTEAD, N. Y., 176  
     Joshua, 157  
 HENLEY, 13, 78  
     in Arden, 69, 77  
 HENRY II., 4  
     III., 93, 95, 104  
     IV., 14, 18, 42, 71, 74, 77, 96  
     V., 96, 137  
     VI., 74, 77, 96  
     VII., 81  
     VIII., 81, 85, 117  
     (Shirley), 93, 94  
 HERCY, John, 40  
 HEREFORD, 107  
 HEREFORDSHIRE, 106, 107  
 HERENDEEN, Anne, 161  
     Obediah, 161  
 HERNDEEN, Anne, 161  
     Obediah, 161  
 HERTFORD, 116  
 HERTFORDSHIRE, 107  
 HERTHILL, Elizabeth, 82  
     John, 75, 81, 82  
 HEWES, Mary, 63  
     Richard, 63, 64  
 HETFORD, Thomas, 47  
 HICKES, Samuel, 146  
 HIGGINS, Cornelius, 169, 170  
     Ebenezer, 170  
     Gideon, 170  
     Hawes, 170  
     Sarah, 169, 170  
 HIGGINSON, Robert, 52  
 HIGHAM, Richard, 86, 87  
 HIGHAM-FERRERS Park, 96  
 HIKKER, John, 16  
 HILLFIELD Hall, 7, 14, 26, 29, 30, 31,  
     32, 33, 42, 43, 43½, 46, 56, 57,  
     63, 64, 121, 143  
 HINCKLEY, Thomas, 128, 145  
 HITCH ARMS, 105  
     Eleanor, 106  
     John, 105  
     Margaret, 105  
 HOCHECOTE, 11  
 HOLBACHE, Barnaby, 20, 47, 48, 52  
 HOLBECKE, Thomas, 38  
 HOLBERG, William, 37  
 HOLLYNGTON, 112  
 HOLME, Richard, 116  
 HOME, William, 106  
 HOOE (Hoo), 44, 112, 113  
 HOORE, Johanna, 68  
 HOPKINS, Gyles (or Giles), 184  
     Mercy, 184  
     Nathaniel, 184  
     Sampson, 38  
     Samuel, 184  
     Sarah, 164  
     Stephen, 164, 184  
     William, 38  
 HORESTONE Castle, 95  
 HORNE, Mr., 121  
 HOSMER, James K., 123  
 HOWES, Annah M., 192  
     Azubah, 187  
     Bethiah, 167, 168, 180, 187  
     David, 180  
     Ebenezer, 167  
     Edmond, 121, 156  
     Edward, 121  
     Elisha, 180  
     Emma F., 191  
     Fanny, 191  
     Franklin, 192  
     George W., 192  
     Isaac, 192  
     J. C., 170, 187, 192  
     Jeremiah, 128, 139, 148, 163, 164,  
         167, 168, 170  
     Jonathan, 191  
     Joseph, 139, 164, 192  
     Joshua, 192  
     Mary, 163, 164, 168  
     Mercy B., 192  
     Patience, 181, 184, 187  
     Priscilla, 180  
     Ruhamah, 181  
     Sarah, 164, 170  
     Seth, 187  
     Seth C., 187  
     Stephen, 180  
     Susannah, 192  
     Thomas, 127, 139, 163, 164, 167, 192  
 HOWLAND, Desire, 145  
     Elizabeth, 145  
     Jabez, 157  
     John, 145  
 HOWMAN, Rev. John, 19, 20

- HURRELL, Richard, 162  
     Sarah, 162  
 HUDSON, Robert, 73  
 HUGFORD, Jane, 28, 61  
     John, 13, 15, 69, 70, 83, 101  
     Margaret, 69, 101  
     William, 66  
 HUGHES, Elizabeth, 195  
 HUNT, Desire, 189  
     Elizabeth, 25  
     John, 44  
     Lemuel, 189  
     Patience, 169  
     Raphael, 36, 46, 64  
     Ursula, 27, 28, 36, 46, 59, 61, 64  
     William, 25  
 HUNTER, Anna, 180  
     Joseph, 180  
 HUNTINGTON, Conn., 160, 162  
 HURLBUT, Henry H., 170  
 HUTCHINSON, Edmund, 137  
 HUTTON, Thomas, 25  
 HYNSON, Edward, 137
- IDLICOTE, 19, 22  
 ILSLEY, Bethiah C., 191  
     Florence, 191  
     William R., 191  
 INVERNESS, Q., 195  
 IRELAND, 6  
 ISTEED ARMS, 108  
     Anna, 108  
     Elizabeth, 108  
     John, 108  
     Richard, 108  
     Thomas, 113
- JACKSON, Elizabeth, 21, 22, 49, 51  
     Thomas, 21, 22, 23, 49, 51  
     Rev. Thomas, 83  
 JAIME, John, 11  
 JAMES I., 31, 37, 133  
     II., 133  
     The, 122, 123, 124, 131, 144  
 JAMESTOWN, Va., 133  
 JENCKES, Jesse, 161  
 JOHNSON, John, 49  
     William S., 160  
 JONES, Inigo, 32  
 JOYCE, John, 127  
 JUDD, William, 176
- KANSAS, 187  
 KATHERINE, Saint, 8  
 KEELINGE, John, 29  
 KELLEY, David, 188  
     Eliza Ann, 188  
     Jonathan, 188  
     Joseph, 188  
     Mary, 188  
     Nehemiah, 188  
     Polly, 188  
     Samuel, 188  
     Tabitha D., 188  
 KEMP, William, 123  
 KENDRICK, Abigail, 186  
     Ansel A., 186  
     Levi, 186  
     Mercy H., 187  
 KENILWORTH, 15, 17, 66, 67, 93, 94  
 KENNEBECK, Me., 127  
 KENT, 41, 89, 109, 110, 111, 116, 117  
     Conn., 175, 176  
     Edward, 189  
     Elizabeth, 189  
 KENWICK, Richard, 36  
     Robert, 36  
     Ursula, 36  
 KILDARE, Count of, 88  
 KILLINGWORTH, 13  
 KIMENHALL, 66  
 KING Philip's War, 145  
 KING'S SUTTON, 36  
 KINGSFORD, 13  
 KINGSWOOD, 70, 77, 78, 83, 102  
 KINGTON, 13  
 KNIGHTLOW, 86  
 KNIGHTS Hospitallars, 86  
     Templars, 86  
 KNIGHTWICK, 107  
 KNOWLE, 5, 11, 12, 13, 16, 18, 67, 70,  
     71, 74, 83, 90, 91  
 KNOWLE, Guild of, 12  
 KYNOTTE, Paul, 114
- LADEROKE, 98, 99, 100  
     Henry de, 99  
     Isabell de, 99  
 LAMBERHURST, 41, 42, 109, 110, 112,  
     113  
 LAMPECK, Katherine (Catharine), 80,  
     81, 90  
 LAMPETT, John, 90  
     Thomas, 90

- LANCASTER, Duke of, 96  
 LANCERS Lands, 68  
 LANGDON Hall, 36  
 LAPWORTH, 73, 74, 76, 77, 78, 79, 83,  
     84, 85, 90, 98, 100, 101, 102  
     Hall, 12, 100  
 LASELL Seminary, 193  
 LEAKE Wooten, 44  
 LEAMINGTON, 29  
 LECROFT, Ranulph de, 11  
 LEICESTER, 102  
 LEICESTERSHIRE, 3, 10, 78, 81, 93, 96,  
     101  
 LEIGH, 25, 43½, 46, 104, 105, 106  
 LEONARD, Elisha, 181  
 LIBBARD's House, 29  
 LICHFIELD, 3, 16, 18, 20, 22, 24, 25,  
     26, 28, 47, 52, 56, 60, 80  
 LIGON, Elizabeth, 80  
     William, 80  
 LIMES, Ralph de, 4  
 LINCOLN, 108, 134  
 LINCOLNSHIRE, 93  
 LINDON, 88  
 LITCHFIELD, Conn., 176  
 LITTLE, Agnes, 80, 90  
 LITTLE Aston, 31  
 LITTLEOVER, 10  
 LODBROKE, 98, 99  
 LONDON, 37, 43, 75, 84, 88, 89, 105,  
     107, 109, 122, 123, 124, 131, 136,  
     137, 138  
     Ann, 64  
 LONGBRIDGEFIELD, 81  
 LONGDON, 4, 5  
     Hall, 67  
 LONG Island, N. Y., 176  
 LORN, Bethiah, 168  
     Rev. Joseph, 168, 170  
 LOTHROP, Barnabas, 141, 142, 143  
     Joseph, 141, 143  
 LOWE, Mary F. B., 195  
     Ruth A., 195  
     William W., 195  
 LOWELL, Mass., 193  
 LOXSPYCHE, 112  
 LULSLEY, 104  
 LUMPKIN, William, 128, 139  
 LYNDON, 5, 88  
 LYNES, Elizabeth, 64  
     George, 64  
 LYNTON, William, 105  
 LYTTLIE, Agnes, 17  
 MALVERN, 104  
 MANNAMOJETT, Mass., 127, 167  
 MANNING, Henry, 117  
     Mildred, 117  
 MANSFIELD, Conn., 188  
 MARDEN, 112, 113  
 MARKHAM, 108  
 MARROW, Dorothy, 86, 89  
     Isabella, 83, 88  
     Samuel, 31, 37  
     Thomas, 84, 87, 88  
     William, 88  
 MARSHFIELD, Mass., 123, 124, 126, 146  
 MARSSON, Mary, 63  
 MARTHA's Vineyard, Mass., 173  
 MARTEN, Stephen, 181  
 MARTIN, Stephen, 181  
 MARTINEAU, P. E., 3, 6, 11, 12  
 MARY, Saint, 8  
 MASON, Mary, 157  
     Sampson, 157  
 MASSACHUSETTS, 185  
     Colony, 133  
     Bay Province, 178  
 MATTHEWS, James, 128, 139  
 MAYFIELD, 108, 109, 117  
 MAYFLOWER, The, 133, 145, 184  
 MAYNE, James, 40  
     John, 39, 40  
     Simon, 40  
 MAYO, Eunice, 175  
     Hannah, 175  
     Rev. John, 128  
 MAYOR's Garden, 38  
 MAYSVILLE, Ky., 177  
 MEISWELL, Isabell, 94  
     Robert, 94  
 MELROSE, Mass., 191  
 MERCIA, 3  
     Earl of, 4  
 MERIDEN Hall, 38  
 MEREVALE Abbey, 63  
 METLEY, Johanna, 69, 101  
     Margaret, 69, 101  
     Nicholas, 69, 70, 101  
 MEXINGTON, Alice, 100  
     Robert, 100  
 MIDDLE Temple, 37, 107  
 MIDDLEBOROUGH, Mass., 150, 151, 164

- MIDDLEMORE, Jane (Joan), 79**  
     John, 85  
     Margery, 85  
**MILCOMBE, 36, 46**  
**MILES, John, 27, 59**  
**MILLER, Experience, 150, 151**  
     Francis, 150  
     John, 137, 139, 143, 148  
     Rev. John, 127, 130, 139  
**MILTON, John, 133**  
**MILWARD, Christopher, 91, 51**  
**MITCHELL, Experience, 196**  
**MITTON, Jane, 81, 85**  
     Johan, 85  
     John, 85  
**MOAT House, 108**  
**MONGAY, 112, 113**  
**MONOMOY, Mass., 147, 165, 167**  
**MONTAGUE, Lord, 111**  
**MONTFORD, Margaret de, 100**  
     Simon, 24  
     William de, 100  
**MOORE, George, 137**  
**MOREHOUSE, 108**  
**MORRICE, Anne, 134, 135**  
     Golding, 134  
     Joan, 134  
     Nicholas, 134  
     Thomas, 134  
     Ursula, 134  
     William, 134  
**MORRIS, Anne, 121**  
**MORTLAKE, 117**  
**MORTON, Ephraim, 146**  
     Gov. Marcus, 174  
     Maria, 174  
     Stephen, 181  
**MORTEN, Stephen, 181**  
**MOSELEY, 68**  
**MOUNTFORD, Rose, 84**  
**MUCH Malvern, 105**  
**MULLENS, William, 124**  
**NANTUCKET, Mass., 173, 180**  
**NASH, Treadway R., 104, 105**  
**NASHE, Dorothy, 107**  
     John, 107  
**NASSAU, Bahama Islands, 188**  
**NAUSET Beach (Chatham, Mass.), 187**  
**NEALE, John, 135**  
**NELSON, William, 134**  
**NETHER Eatendon, 93**  
**NETHER Norton, 86**  
     Pillardington, 18  
     Woodcot, 87  
**NEVILL, Richard, 70, 75, 101**  
**NEW Bedford, Mass., 174**  
**NEWBURY, 116**  
     Mass., 123  
**NEWELL, Jonathan, 161**  
**NEW England, 6, 139, 151, 159, 162, 178**  
**NEWBY, Henry, 27, 59**  
**NEW Hampshire, 160**  
     Hanover County, N. C., 163  
     London, Conn., 157  
**NEWNHAM, 80, 100**  
     Edmund, 102  
     Lettice, 100  
     Thomas, 100  
**NEWPORT, R. I., 186**  
     William, 89  
**NEWTON, 93**  
     Berry, 116  
     Adin G., 192  
     Adin H., 192  
     Anjennette, 192  
     Henry S., 192  
     Horatio D. P., 192  
     Mercy O., 192  
     Susan A., 192  
     Susan T., 192  
**NEW York, 160, 165, 174, 176, 185, 194**  
**NICHOLAS, Elizabeth, 43**  
     Prosper, 43  
**NICKERSON, Betsey, 188**  
     Ebenezer, 188  
     Nicholas, 128, 138  
     William, 126, 127, 156, 172  
**NIVENS, W., 31**  
**NOBSCUSSET (Yarmouth, Mass.), 129**  
**NORFOLK, Duke of, 88**  
**NORMAN, Normans, 3, 10, 82**  
**NORRIS, Rev. Henry, 23, 24, 69, 70, 72, 73, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 83, 84, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 100, 102**  
**NORTHAMPTON, 13, 43½, 69, 102**  
**NORTHAMPTONSHIRE, 3, 13, 16, 24, 36, 76, 81, 93, 95, 96, 98, 99, 100, 107**  
**NORTH Carolina, 162, 163**  
     Kingstown, R. I., 162  
**NORTHUMBERLAND, 116**  
**NORTON, 86, 87**  
     Isaac, 165

- NORTON, Sarah, 165  
 NOTTINGHAM, 96, 108  
 NOTTINGHAMSHIRE, 96, 108  
 NYE, David, 181  
  
 OBLONG, The, N. Y., 175  
 ODELL, Alice, 107  
     Elizabeth, 103  
     Ralph, 107  
     William, 103  
 ODINGSBELL, Ela de, 4, 10  
     Hugh de, 4  
     William de, 4, 6, 8, 10  
 OFFCHURCH, 86, 87  
 OHIO, 151  
 OKEN, Thomas, 17  
 OLTON, 4, 5, 11, 12, 13  
     Hall, 11  
 OMERSLEY, 107  
 ONSLOW County, N. C., 163  
 ORCUTT, Rev. Samuel, 159, 160, 161,  
     162  
 ORPEN, Abraham, 72  
     Rebecca D., 72  
 OSWESTRY, 73  
 OTIS, Amos, 126, 130, 145, 148, 149  
     Harriet F., 196  
     Horace W., 196  
     Lena F., 196  
 OVER Woodcot, 87  
 OVINGTON, 135  
 OWKHAM, 112  
 OXFORD, 15, 36, 46, 102  
     University, 121  
 OXFORDSHIRE, 3, 18, 76, 117  
  
 PACKINGTON Parva, 79  
 PACKWOOD, 78, 82, 83, 85  
 PADDY, William, 123  
 PAGE, John, 158  
 PAINE, Ebenezer, 172, 179  
     Josiah, 172  
 PALFREY, John G., 133  
 PALMER, Elizabeth, 78  
     John, 111  
     Thomas, 78  
     William, 126  
 PARKBURY, 107  
 PARKER-JERVIS, Swynfen, 31  
 PARTERIDGE, Gabriell, 137  
 PATTERSON, Elizabeth, 195  
     Joseph, 195  
     Rachel, 195  
  
 PAUNTLEY, 80  
 PAYBODY, William, 146  
 PEAS, Benjamin, 174  
 PECHE, Sir John, 99  
 PEE, Thomas, 11  
 PELLETREAU, William S., 176  
 PEMBERTON, Rev. Robert, 3, 4, 5, 6,  
     7, 8, 9, 10, 12, 13, 15, 16, 22, 26,  
     29, 32, 36, 38, 42, 66, 67  
 PENDER County, N. C., 163  
 PETERBOROUGH, 108  
 PEVENSEY, 112  
 PHILLIPS, Sir Thomas, 107  
     Thomas, 128  
 PHILLIPSE Patent, N. Y., 175, 176  
 PHIPS, Lt. Gov. Spencer, 178  
 PILLARDINGTON, 18  
 PILLERTON Hersey, 18, 19, 22  
 PINCKNEY, Susanna, 162  
 PINING, Anne, 134  
     Joane, 134  
     Mary, 134  
 PINNING, Joane, 63  
     Humphrey, 63  
 PITCHER, Anne, 107  
     Richard, 106, 107  
 PITMAN, Henry, 189  
     Mary, 189  
     Polley, 189  
 PLUMMER, John, 68  
     Margaret, 68  
 PLYMOUTH, Mass., 123, 133, 138, 145,  
     146, 149, 166  
     Colony, 124, 133, 151  
     County, 164  
 POITOU, 94  
 POLE, Anne, 47  
 POLESWORTH, 89  
 POOLEY, 89  
 POPE, Charles H., 121, 123, 127  
 PORT-AU-PRINCE, Hayti, 189  
 PORTER Arms, 108  
     Wills, 110, 113  
     Agnes, 108, 110, 111, 112, 113  
     Anna (Anne), 108, 110  
     Dionisia, 109  
     Elizabeth, 41, 110, 113, 122  
     George, 108, 109, 111, 112, 113, 115  
     Henry, 42, 108  
     Jane, 15, 37, 41, 46, 109, 110, 113,  
     117, 121

- PORTER, Joan, 108  
     John, 41, 42, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 114, 115  
     Maria, 109, 111  
     Martha, 110, 113  
     Mary, 110, 113  
     Richard, 37, 41, 46, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 117, 121, 122  
     Robert, 108, 109, 111, 112, 115  
     Stephen, 108, 109, 110, 112, 113  
     Susanna, 110  
     Thomas, 109, 110, 112, 114, 115  
     William, 108  
 POULTON, William, 137  
 POWICK, 104  
 PRATT'S Farm, 16, 38  
 PRENCE, Mary, 168,  
     Sarah, 168, 170  
     Gov. Thomas, 145, 164, 168, 175  
 PRENDERGAST, Amelia A., 193  
     John W., 193  
     Nancy D., 193  
 PRINCE, Margery, 44  
     Sarah, 170  
 PROVIDENCE, R. I., 151, 157, 158, 162, 163  
 PROVINCETOWN, Mass., 150, 192  
 PUREFFY, Isabella, 80  
     Philip, 80  
     Thomas, 85  
 PUTNAM County, N. Y., 175, 176  
 PYCHARD, Anne, 107  
     Richard, 107  
 PYTCHER, Richard, 106  
     William, 106  
 QUEBEC, 133  
 QUIMBY, Edward, 41, 109, 123  
     Jane, 41, 42, 109  
 RACINE, Wis., 170  
 RADBOURNE, 99  
     Joane, 99  
     William, 99  
 RADCLIFFE College, 192  
 RAINSFORD Arms, 18  
     Hall, 18  
     Johanna, 15, 17, 18, 45  
     John, 18  
 RAKDALE, 96  
 RASTALL, William, 135  
 RASTELL, Elizabeth, 63  
 RASTELL, Henry, 134  
     William, 122, 134  
 RATCLIFF Super Soar, 96, 97  
     Super Wreak, 96  
 REDDING, Conn., 176  
 RENHOBOTH, Mass., 157  
 RELPH, Thomas, 157  
 RHODE Island, 161, 163, 190  
 RIDEL, Matilda, 94  
 RING, Andrew, 126  
 RIPTON Parish, Conn., 160, 162  
 RIVINGTON, James, 176  
 ROBINSON, Elyn, 25  
     Laurence, 25  
 ROBERTH, William, 113  
 ROBERTS, Ann, 117  
     George, 117  
 ROBINS, Jane, 18  
 ROBY, Rev. Mr., 185  
 ROBINSON, Samuel, 160  
 ROCHESTER, Mass., 150  
 ROCK, Thomas, 105  
 RODY Arms, 92  
     Joan (Johanna), 74, 76, 92  
     John, 92  
     Margeria, 92  
     Michael, 92  
     Nicholas, 92  
     Thomas, 74, 76, 92  
     William, 76, 92  
 ROGERS, Joseph, 137, 145  
 ROMAN, 3  
 ROMNEY, Alice, 104  
     Elizabeth, 107  
     Lawrence, 107  
     Thomas, 104  
     William, 104  
 ROMPNEY, Elizabeth, 107  
     Lawrence, 107  
 ROMSEY Abbey, 4  
 ROTHERFIELD, 41  
 ROWINGTON, 12, 66, 83  
 RUDDING, Alice, 106  
 RUDING, Edmund, 107  
     Jane, 106, 107  
 RUDLAND, E. M., 144  
 RUMNEY, William, 106  
 RYDER, Bethish C., 191  
     Desire, 189  
     Eunice, 193  
     Experience, 189  
     Hannah, 169, 175

- RYDER, James, 169, 177, 178, 179  
     John, 166  
     Samuel, 128  
     Zoeth, 189  
 RYLAND, J. W., 12, 18  
 RYTON, Margery, 103  
     Thomas, 103  
  
 SABLE Island, 190  
 SAINT ANTHEGE, Chantry of, 31  
     Clement, Chapel of, 20, 25  
     Dunston in the West, 43  
     John, Chapel of, 25  
     John of Jerusalem, 88  
     Mary Aldermanbury, 43  
     Thomas à Becket, Chapel of, 20  
 SALEHURST, 108  
 SALEM, Mass., 123  
 SALOP, 95  
 SANDERS, Thomas, 52  
 SANDWICH, Mass., 124, 181  
 SARES, Richard, 139  
 SASWALO (Shirley), 93, 94  
 SAVAGE, James, 121, 123, 145  
     John, 63  
 SAVANNAH, Ga., 188, 193  
 SAWY, Joane, 64  
 SAXON, SAXONS, 3, 4, 10  
 SCHOFIELD, Fielding, 192  
     Sarah A., 192  
 SCITUATE, Mass., 126, 150  
 SCOTCH, 95  
 SCOTTS, 95  
 SEARS, Daniel, 166, 171  
     Paul, 192  
     Richard, 128, 132, 139, 180, 182  
 SEVERANCE, Joseph, 128  
 SECONSETT (Chatham, Mass.), 172  
 SEWALL (Shirley), 94  
     Judge Samuel, 166, 173  
 SHAKESPEARE, William, 133  
 SHAWY, Joane, 63  
     William, 63  
 SHELTON, 66, 96, 97  
     Elizabeth, 27, 28, 36, 46, 59, 61, 64  
     William, 27, 36, 46, 59, 61, 64  
 "SHELLDON, Maister," 106  
 SHELLY, 13, 14, 16, 26, 43½, 29, 38, 43,  
     63, 64  
 SHENSTONE, 8  
 SHEPHERD, Constance, 22  
     Thomas, 22  
  
 SHERMAN, Conn., 161  
 SHIRFORD, 80  
 SHIRLEY, 4, 5, 11, 31, 63, 64, 93, 95  
     Arms, 93  
     Agnes, 94  
     Alice, 96  
     Beatrice, 77, 79, 81  
     Beatrice, 95, 97  
     Sir Hugh, 95, 96  
     Isabel, 95  
     Sir James, 94  
     Jocosa, 96  
     Joyse, 96  
     Matilda, 94  
     Margaret, 95  
     Ralph, 77, 79, 81, 95, 96, 97  
     Sir Thomas, 95  
 SHREWSBURY, 95, 96  
 SHROPSHIRE, 73, 81  
 SILHILL, 3  
 SLATER, Hannah, 169  
     John, 169  
 SIMPKINS, Nicholas, 125  
 SMALL, Mercy B., 192  
 SMALLWOOD, Catherine, 19, 21, 51, 63  
     Roger, 49  
     William, 19, 21, 63  
 SMETHWICK, 25  
 SMITH, Benjamin, 173  
     Bethiah, 168  
     Christopher, 191  
     Christopher I., 191  
     Desire, 189  
     Dorcas, 172  
     Emme F., 191  
     Enoch, 190  
     Ephraim, 191, 192  
     Florence, 191  
     George, 191  
     Henry O., 192  
     John, 25, 168, 191  
     Lucas, 191  
     Rev. Luke, 22  
     Marjorie C., 191  
     Mercena, 192  
     Mercy, 191  
     Miriam, 188  
     Nicholas, 10  
     Ralph, 168, 191  
     Richard, 191  
     Sally T., 191  
     Samuel, 191

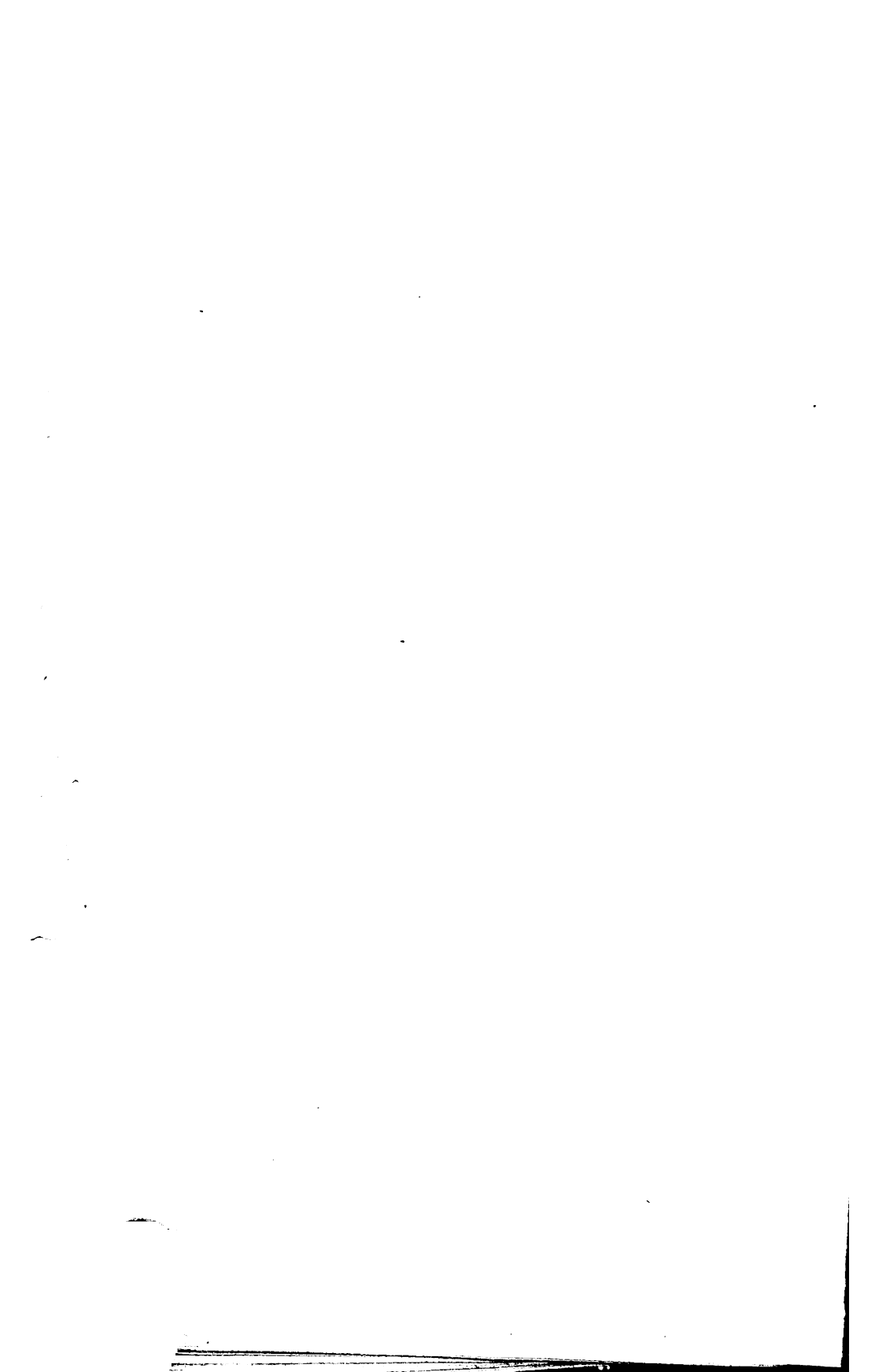


- SMITH, Sarah A., 192  
     Sarah T., 191  
     Seth, 189  
     Stephen, 191  
     Susan T., 192  
     Thomas, 174  
     William C., 156, 165, 166, 169, 191  
     Willietta F., 191  
 SMITHFIELD, R. I., 88, 158, 159, 160, 161  
 SMYTH, Andrew, 100  
     John, 16  
 SNELSTON, Rev. William, 83  
 SOLIHULL, 3, 4, 5, 6, 10, 11, 12, 13, 15, 16, 17, 19, 20, 21, 22, 24, 26, 28, 30, 36, 37, 38, 42, 43½, 44, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 52, 56, 57, 60, 61, 62, 66, 67, 68, 69, 73, 87, 88, 89, 107, 110, 121, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 143  
     Church, 6  
     School, 8  
 SOMERSET House, 18  
 SOMERSETSHIRE, 104  
 SOUTH, Robert, 137  
 SOUTHALL, 107  
 SOUTHAMPTON, 41, 122, 123, 131  
 SOUTHEAST, N. Y., 175  
 SOUTH Dartmouth, Mass., 187  
     Framingham, Mass., 195  
     Sea (Yarmouth, Mass.), 129, 130  
 SOUTHWORTH, Thomas, 145  
 SPEHERD, Constance, 22  
     Thomas, 22, 45  
 SPENCER, Thomas, 17  
 SPROAT, Ebenezer, 150  
     Experience, 150  
     Robert, 150  
 SPROUT, Ebenezer, 150  
     Experience, 150  
     James, 150  
     Robert, 150  
 STAFFORD, 25, 31, 95  
     Earl of, 96  
 STAFFORDSHIRE, 3, 24, 81, 90  
 STANDISH, Capt. Myles, 126  
 STANFORD, 134  
 STAPLEHURST, 112  
 STAPLES, Robert, 160  
 STARR, Thomas, 130  
 STEPHEN, King, 93  
 STERETON, Parnell, 76  
     Robert, 76  
 STOKES Albany, 24  
     Green, 36, 46  
 STONELEIGH, 107  
 STONLEY, William, 76  
 STRADLING, Edward, 80  
     Elizabeth, 80  
 STRATFORD, Conn., 159, 160, 161, 162  
     on Avon, 3, 19, 90, 133  
 STUDSON, Robert, 146  
 STURGIS, Thomas, 148  
 STURTEVANT, Samuel, 146  
 SUCKLEY, 104  
 SUDBURY, 135  
 SURREY, 117  
 SUSSEX, 37, 41, 44, 46, 95, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 116, 117, 121, 123  
 SUTTON, John, 146  
 SWEETING, Henry, 163  
 SWEETLAND, Luke, 175  
 SWETT, Clara D., 195  
     Louisiana, 195  
     Noah, 195  
 SWIFT, Charles F., 123, 126, 128, 130, 131, 132, 145, 147, 148, 164, 165  
 SWINFORD, Emma, 100  
     John, 100  
 TAMWORTH Castle, 89  
 TANDIE, Elizabeth, 64  
 TANWORTH, 11, 12  
 TAPENHALL, 107  
 TASSARST, 112  
 TAUNTON, Mass., 192  
 TAYLOR, Thomas, 137  
     Abigail, 180  
     Barnabas, 180  
     Bethiah, 180, 181  
     John, 166, 180, 189  
     Rev. John L., 175  
     Joseph, 175  
     Polly, 169  
     Reuben C., 189, 190  
     Rhodia, 180  
     Richard, 128, 129, 139, 189  
     Sally, 189  
     Samuel, 166, 177, 179, 185, 189, 190  
     Sarah, 189  
     Seth, 180, 181  
     Susannah, 189

- TAYLOR, Thomas, 184  
 TEW Magna, 18  
 TEWKSBURY, 105  
 TEXEL, 123  
 THACHER, Anthony, 124, 125, 127,  
     128, 129, 130, 132, 139  
     John, 128, 129, 139, 140, 141, 142,  
     143, 148, 149, 152, 153, 155  
     Josiah, 153, 155  
     Lydia, 141, 142, 149  
     Peter, 153  
 THAME, 117  
 THORNTON, Rev. Thomas, 128, 139  
 THORPE, Lettice, 100  
     Thomas, 100  
 THROCKMORTON, Margaret, 37  
     Robert, 85, 86  
     Thomas, 22, 37  
 TILLEY, Elizabeth, 145  
 TILLINGHAST, Benjamin, 162  
 TINKHAM, Ephraim, 146  
 TITCHFIELD, 41, 109  
 TIMMINS, Samuel, 70  
 TOMPKINS County, N. Y., 176  
 TONWORTH, 18  
 TORREY, James, 146  
 TRUSSELL, John, 16  
 TUBBS, William, 126  
 TUCK, Thomas, 137  
 TUCKER, Hannah, 175  
     Samuel, 171, 175  
 TURBERVILLE, Isabell, 104  
     Richard, 104  
 TURCHIL, 4  
 TURNER, Edward, 64  
 TUTBURY, 94  
  
 UDIMORE, 109  
 ULVERLEY, 4, 7  
     Hall, 66  
 UNDERHILL, Mary, 107  
     Raffe, 107  
  
 VASSALBORO, Me., 165  
 VINEYARD Sound, Mass., 129  
 VOSE, Euphemia A., 165  
  
 WADHURST, 109, 115, 116  
 WAKEFIELD, Mass., 191  
 WALCROFT, 25  
 WALDESHOF, Margaret de, 95  
     Walter de, 95  
  
 WALES, 6, 106  
 WALSALL, 15, 24, 25  
 WALTON, Agnes de, 94  
 WAPPENBURY, 86  
 WARD, Adam, 137  
     Rev. Thomas, 29  
 WARDWELL, Mary, 174  
     William T., 174  
 WARING, Thomas, 20, 47, 48, 50, 51  
 WARNETT, Edmond, 122, 136, 137  
 WARREN, Conn., 175, 176  
     Sarah, 149  
 WARS of the Roses, 82  
 WARWICK, 3, 4, 17, 18, 19, 25, 37, 38,  
     43½, 44, 45, 47, 52, 60, 67, 69, 73,  
     74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 81, 82, 86,  
     87, 88, 92, 95, 98, 107, 110, 134,  
     135, 136  
     Earl of, 13, 70, 74, 75, 81, 82, 101  
 WARWICKSHIRE, 3, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14,  
     16, 18, 22, 23, 24, 26, 36, 39, 42,  
     43, 44, 46, 56, 62, 66, 69, 70, 71,  
     72, 73, 76, 80, 81, 83, 85, 86, 89,  
     90, 93, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 101, 103,  
     107, 121, 136  
 WASHBURN, John, 126  
 WASHINGTON, Gen., 176  
 WATERMAN, Richard, 158  
 WATERS, Henry F., 109, 110, 116, 117  
 WATERTON, Richard, 78  
 WATERTOWN, Mass., 196  
 WATTON, 96  
     Agnes de, 94  
 WATTSON, John, 101  
 WATURTON, Robert, 77  
 WEALE, Richard, 49  
 WEAVER, F. W., 107  
 WEBB, Eunice, 176  
     Josiah, 176  
 WEDGNOCK Park, 18, 19  
 WELCH, Charles, 136  
     H. B., 170  
 WELSH, 3  
 WELLES, Alice, 64  
 WELLFLEET, Mass., 183, 195  
 WEMBURY, 110  
 WENBOURNE, 116  
     Katharine, 116  
 WEST Chatham, Mass., 179  
     Field (Yarmouth, Mass.), 126  
     Medford, Mass., 195  
     Newton, 95

- West, Christian, 67, 68  
     John, 67, 68  
     William, 67, 68  
 Westcott, Margaret, 63  
     Richard, 63  
 Westhall, 96  
 Westley, William, 87  
 Westminster, 122  
 Weston, 16, 24  
 Wheatley, John, 116  
     Maud, 116  
 Wheaton, John, 157  
 Wheeler, Samuel, 159  
 Whelding (Whelden), Henry, 139  
 Whetnall, Isabel, 21, 51  
 Whipple, Jonathan, 158  
 White Friars, 75  
     Church, 75  
 Whitfield Arms, 116  
     Hall, 116  
     Agnes, 116, 117  
     Ann, 117  
     Elizabeth, 116, 117  
     Frances, 117  
     Rev. Henry, 117  
     Jane, 109, 117  
     Joan, 117  
     John, 116, 117  
     Katharine, 116  
     Margaret, 117  
     Mary, 117  
     Matilda, 116  
     Maud, 116  
     Mildred, 117  
     Myles, 116  
     Richard, 116  
     Robert, 109, 116, 117  
     Sarah, 117  
     Thomas, 115, 116, 117  
     William, 116, 117  
 Whitlokks Feld, 25  
 Whitlox, 5  
 Whittington, Elizabeth, 80  
     W., 80  
 Widney, 4, 5, 63  
 Wildegoose, Joan, 108  
     John, 108  
     William, 108  
 Wilkys, John, 25  
     Richard, 25  
     Robert, 25  
 William I., 3, 4  
 William III., 151  
     & Mary, 133  
 Williams College, 176  
     T. E., 30  
 Willmore, Frederick W., 24  
 Willows, 96  
 Winchester, Mass., 195  
 Winslow, Bethiah, 163  
     Gov. Edward, 146  
     Josias, 127, 145, 146  
     Kencelm, 163  
 Winsor, Joshua, 160  
     Justin, 123, 125, 130, 132  
 Winter, Robert, 106  
 Winthrop, Gov. John, 123  
 Withers, Henry, 137  
 Withyham, 110  
 Wixon, Didamy, 188  
     Zelotus, 188  
 Wode, Avice atte, 11  
     Richard atte, 11  
 Wodehull, Baron of, 107  
     Alice, 107  
     Foulk, 107  
     Nicholas, 107  
 Wolfhamcote, 98  
 Wolf, The, 186  
 Wollaston, George, 25  
     Joan, 25  
     Thomas, 25  
 Woodcote, Nether, 86, 87  
     Over, 86, 87  
 Woodhouse, 25, 45  
 Woodhull, Elizabeth, 102  
     William, 102  
 Woodley, Thomas, 113  
 Woodloes, 23, 25  
 Woodlow, 23, 25, 39, 44, 75, 77, 78, 79,  
     85, 86, 87  
 Worcester, 14, 18, 19, 36, 43½, 44,  
     46, 104, 105  
 Worcestershire, 3, 13, 25, 32, 67, 104,  
     105, 107  
 Worth, 117  
     Dorcas, 173  
     John, 173  
 Wroxall Abbey, 17, 18, 19, 80, 90  
 Wynnewik, Wynnewike, William, 12  
 Wythey, Anne, 106  
 Yale College, 150, 165, 176, 177  
 Yardley, 13, 14, 67, 68

- |                                    |                    |
|------------------------------------|--------------------|
| YARMOUTH, Mass., 124, 125, 126,    | YOUNG, Edmund, 191 |
| 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 138, | John, 171, 172     |
| 139, 140, 141, 142, 145, 146, 147, | Jonathan, 183      |
| 148, 149, 151, 164, 165, 166, 167, | Moses, 169         |
| 168, 175, 177                      | Phebe, 182         |
| YARMOUTHPORT, Mass., 129, 130      | Thankful, 169      |





NON - CIRCULATING

NON - CIRCULATING

89062867122



b89062867122a





89062867122



B89062867122A